



# Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

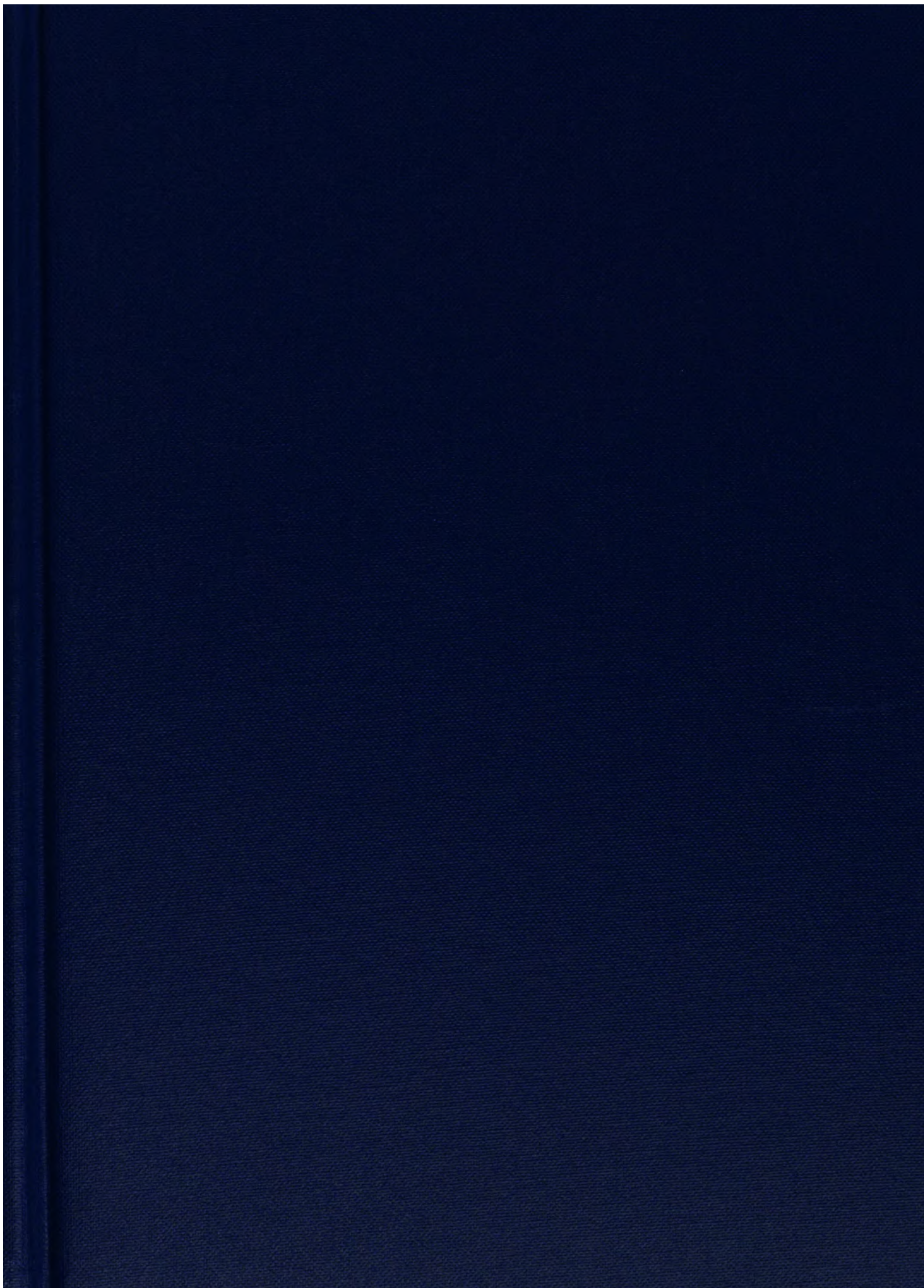
This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

For more information see:

<http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks>



This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.



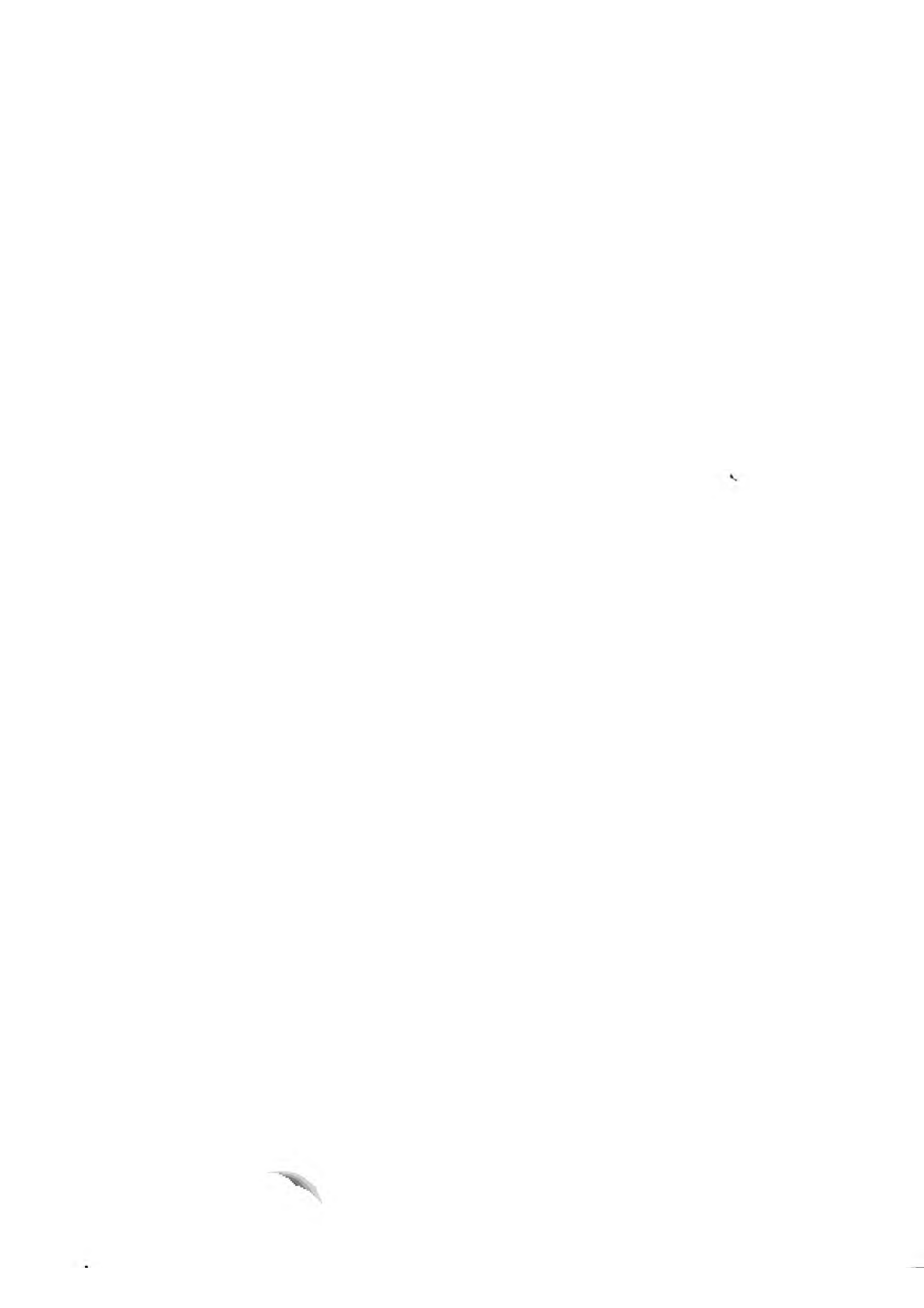
S. Hut. Lit.  $\frac{133}{8}$

E. 5. 487

2693 d. 3 = A. 5. 2612  $\frac{1}{3}$

= S E. 126 70.  $\frac{1}{8}$





The Huth Library.

---

THE  
LIFE AND COMPLETE WORKS  
IN  
PROSE AND VERSE  
OF  
ROBERT GREENE, M.A.

CAMBRIDGE AND OXFORD.

*IN FIFTEEN VOLUMES.*

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED,  
WITH NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.  
ALEXANDER B. GROSART, D.D., LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),  
*St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.*

**VOL. VIII.—PROSE.**  
GREENES NEUER TOO LATE.  
AND  
FRANCESCOS FORTUNES.  
1590.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.  
1881-86.

50 copies.]

2693

dl. 8

---

*Printed by Hazell, Watson, & Viney, Ltd., London and Aylesbury.*

**The Huth Library.**

THE  
**LIFE AND COMPLETE WORKS**  
IN  
**PROSE AND VERSE**  
OF  
**ROBERT GREENE, M.A.**

CAMBRIDGE AND OXFORD.

*IN TWELVE VOLUMES.*

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED,  
WITH NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A.,  
*St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.*

**VOL. VIII.—PROSE.**

**GREENES NEUER TOO LATE.**  
AND  
**FRANCESCOS FORTUNES.**

1590.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1881—83.

50 Copies.]





---

*Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, London and Aylesbury*

## CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
GREENES NEUER TOO LATE . . . . .	I
FRANCESCOS FORTUNES . . . . .	111
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC. . . . .	230

#### ORDEALS.

Faith owns the rude magnificence of thought,  
Wherewith those venturous ages, in the dearth  
Of homage due to law, as umpire brought  
The Hand of Heaven to show the right on earth,  
And so for God's interposition pined,  
That they, in weal or woe, were quick to find  
Footprints of marvel. Better to make sure  
Of earth in Heaven, by training love and awe  
To supernatural heights, than so to draw  
Our Heaven within the maze of life obscure.  
Yet oh ! how far beneath both moods are we,  
Who from our place of exile fain would strike  
As an intrusive Presence we dislike,  
The sweet forebodings of eternity !

F. W. FABER, D.D. (Poems, 1857, p. 526).



XVII.

GREENES  
NEUER TOO LATE.

1590.



**NOTE.**

The exemplar of "Greenes Neuer too late," including the second part of "Francescos Fortunes", from which our text has been taken, is a very fine one. Apparently the original edition (of 1590) was kept standing as set up and impressions continuously issued as required, and still bearing the date of 1590. Of three copies examined by me two seemed much more worn in the type than that transcribed, which is in the British Museum.—G.

GREENES  
Neuer too late.

Or,

A Powder of Experience:

*Sent to all youthfull Gentlemen; to  
roote out the infectious follies, that  
ouer-reaching conceits foster in the spring  
time of their youth.*

Decyphering in a true English hi-  
*storie, those particular vanities that with*  
their frostie vapours nip the blossoms of eue-  
*rie ripe braine, from atteining to his in-*  
tended perfection.

As pleasant, as profitable, being a right  
*pumice stone, apt to race out idleneffe with*  
delight, and follie with  
*admonition.*

*Rob. Greene in artibus Magister.*

*Omne tulit punctum.*

LONDON

Printed by Thomas Orwin for N. L.  
and Iohn Busbie. 1590.





To the right Worshipfull Tho-  
*mas Burnaby Esquire, Robert Greene*  
wisfeth encrease of al hono-  
*rable vertues.*

**S**Vch (right Worshipfull) as coueted to  
decke the Temple of *Delphos*, adorned  
the shrine eyther with greene bayes, or  
curious instruments, because *Apollo* did as well  
patronize Musicke as Poetrie. When the Troyans  
fought to pacifie the wrath of *Pallas*: the peoples  
presents were books and launces, to signifie her  
deitie, as well defended by letters as armes. And  
they which desired to be in the fauor of *Alexander*,  
brought him either wise Philosophers or hardy  
Souldiours: for hee sought counsellors like *Aristotle*,  
and captaines like *Perdycas*. Seeing then how giftes  
are the more gratefullie accepted, by how much  
the more they fit the humor of the party to whome  
they are presented: desirous a long time to gratifie




your Worship with something that might signifie, how in al bounden duetie I haue for fundry fauors bin affected to your Worship, and finding my ability to be vnfit to present you with any thing of woorth; at last I resolued so farre to presume as to trouble your Worship wyth / the patronage of this Pamphlet, knowing you are such a *Mæcenas* of learning, that you will as soone vouch with *Augustus* a few verses, giuen by a poor Greeke as of the Arabian Courser, presented by *Tytinius*. The Booke is little, yet drawen from a large principle, *Nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via*: wherin I haue discouered so artificially the fraudulent effects of *Venus* trumperies and so plainly as in a platforme, laid open the preiudiciall pleasures of loue, that Gentlemen may see, that as the Diamond is beauteous to the sight, and yet deadly poyson to the stomacke, that as the Bacan leafe containeth both the Antidote, and the Aconiton, so loue (vnlesse only grounded vpon vertue) breedeth more disparagement to the credit than content to the fancy. If then (right Worshipfull) out of this confused Chaos Gentlemen shall gather any principles, whereby to direct their actions, and that from rash and resolute maintainers of *Venus* heresies they become reformed champions to defend *Vestaes* philosophies. Then all the profit and pleasure that shall redound to them by this Pamphlet shall be attributed to your Worship, as to the man,

by whose meanes this *Nunquam sera* came to light.  
Hoping therefore your Worship wil with a  
fauorable insight enter more into the  
mind of the giuer than the woorth  
of the gift, I commit your  
Worship vnto the  
Almightie.

*Your Worships humbly to commaund,*  
Rob. Greene. /

To the Gentlemen Readers.

 *Vch Gentleme as had their eares filld with the harmony of Orpheus harp, could not abide th' arsh musick of Hiparchions pipe : yet the Theffalians would allowe the poore fidler license to frolick it among shepheards. Though no pictures could goe for currant with Alexander, but such as past through Apelles pensill, yet poore men had their houses shadowed with Phidias course colours. Ennius was called a Poet as well as Virgil, and Vulcan with his polt foote friskt with Venus as well as Mars. Gentlemen, if I presume to present you as hethertoo I haue done with friuolous toyes ; yet for that I stretch my strings as hie as I can ; if you praise me not with Orpheus, hisse me not out with Hipparchion: if I paint not with Apelles, yet scrape not out my shadowes with disgrace ; if I stirre my stumpes with Vulcan, though it bee lamely done, yet thinke it is a daunce : so if my Nunquam fera est please not ; yet I pray you passe it ouer with patience, and say tis a booke. So hoping I shall finde you as euer I haue done, I end.*

Robert Greene. /



*A Madrigale to wanton  
Louers.*

*Y*ou that by Alcidalions siluer brookes  
Sit and sigh out the passions of your loues,  
That on your Goddesse beauties feede your lookes,  
And pamper vp sweete Venus wanton Doues,  
That seeke to sit by Cupids scorching fire,  
And dally in the fountaines of desire.

*You that accompt no heauen like Venus spheare,  
That thinke each dimple in your Mistresse chin  
Earths paradise, that deeme her golden haire  
Tresses of blisse wherein to wander in :  
That sigh and court suppliant all to proue,  
Cupid is God, and theres no heauen but Loue.*

*Come see the worke that Greene hath slilie wrought,  
Take but his Nunquam fera in your view :  
As in a myrrour there is deeply taught  
The wanton vices of prouid fancies crew :  
There is depainted by most curious art,  
How loue and follie iumpe in euery part.*

*There may you see repentance all in blacke,  
Scourging the forward passions of fond youth,  
How fading pleasures end in dismall wracke,  
How louers ioyes are tempred all with ruth,  
Sith then his Nunquam fera yeeldes such gaines,  
Reade it, and thanke the Author for his paines.*

Ralph Sidley. /

πολακι και κηπορος ανηρ μαλα καιρια ειπε.

*I* F Horace *satyres merit mickle praise,*  
*For taunting such as liu'd in Paphos Ile,*  
*If wise Propertius was in elder dayes*  
*Laureat for figuring out fond Venus wile :*  
*If Rome applauded Ouids pleasing verse,*  
*That did the salues that medicine loue rehearse.*

*Then English Gentles stoope and gather bayes,*  
*Make coronets of Floraes proudest flowers,*  
*As gifts for Greene, for he must haue the praise,*  
*And taste the deawes that high Parnassus showers.*  
*As hauing leapt beyond olde Horace straine,*  
*In taunting louers for their fruitlesse paine,*

*His Nunquam fera more conceits combines,*  
*Than wanton Ouid in his art did paint,*  
*And sharper satyres are within his lines,*  
*Than Martial soong prouwd Venus to attaint.*  
*Reade then his art, and all his actions proue,*  
*There is no follie like to foolish loue.*

Richard Hake, Gent.



G R E E N E S

*Nunquam sera est.*



Being resident in *Bergamo*, not farre distant from *Venice*, sitting vnder a coole shade that thē shrowded me from the extreme violence of the meridionall heate, hauing neuer a booke in my hand to beguyle tyme, nor no patheticall impressiō in my head to procure any secreet meditation, I had flat fallen into a slumber, if I had not espied a traueller weary and desolate, to haue bended his steppes towards me. Desirous to shake off drowfinesse with some companie I attended his arriual; but as hee drewe neere, he seemed so quaint in his attire, and so conceited in his countenance, as I deemed the man eyther some penitent pilgrime that was very religious, or some despayring louer that had bin too too affectionate : For thus take his description.

An Ode.

*Downe the valley gan he tracke,  
Bagge and bottle at his backe,*



*In a furcoate all of gray,  
 Such weare Palmers on the way,  
 When with scrip and staffe they see  
 Iesus graue on Caluarie.  
 A hat of straw like a swaine |  
 Shealter for the sonne and raine,  
 With a scollop shell before :  
 Sandalls on his feete he wore,  
 Legs were bare, armes vnclad,  
 Such attire this Palmer had.  
 His face faire like Titans shine,  
 Gray and buxome were his eyne,  
 Whereout dropt pearles of sorrow :  
 Such sweete teares Loue doth borrow,  
 When in outward deawes she plaines  
 Harts distresse that Louers paines :  
 Rubie lips, cherrie cheekes,  
 Such rare mixture Venus seekes,  
 When to keepe hir damfels quiet  
 Beautie sets them downe their diet :  
 Adon' was not thought more faire.  
 Curled lockes of amber haire :  
 Lockes where Loue did sit and twine  
 Nets to snare the gazers eyne :  
 Such a Palmer nere was seene,  
 Lesse loue himselfe had Palmer been.  
 Yet for all he was so quaint  
 Sorrow did his visage taint.*

*Midst the riches of his face,  
 Griefe decyphred his disgrace :  
 Euerie step straind a teare,  
 Sodaine sighes shewd his feare :  
 And yet his feare by his sight,  
 Ended in a strange delight.  
 That his passions did approue,  
 Weedes and sorrow were for loue.*

Thus attired in his traueiling roabes and leueld out in the lineaments of his Phisnomie, not seeing me that lay close in the thicket, hee fate him downe vnder a Béech tree, where after he had taken vp his seate, with a sigh he began / thus to point out his passions.

Infortunate Palmer, whose wéedes discouers thy woes, whose lookes thy forrowes, whose sighes thy repentance : thou wandrest to bewayle thy sinne, that heretofore hast not wondred at the greatnesse of sinne ; and séekest now by the sight of a strange Land, to satisfie those follies committed in thy Natiue home. Why, is there more grace in the East than in the West ? is God more gracious in *Iewrie*, than mercifull in *England* ? more faourable to Palmers for their trauell, than pitifull to sinners for their penance ? No, bee not so superstitious, least thou measuring his faour by circumstance, hee punish thy faultes in feueritie. Ah but the

déepest vlcers haue the sharpest corasiues, some sores cannot be cured but by *Sublimatum*, and some offences as they beginne in content so they ende in sackcloth : I weare not this Palmers gray to challenge grace, nor seeke the holy Land to counteruaile the Lawe, nor am a Pilgrime to acquittance sinne with penaunce : but I content mee in this habite to shewe the meeknes of my hart, and trauel through many countries to make other men learne to beware by my harmes : for if I come amōgft youth, I will shew them that the finest buds are soonest nipt with frosts, the sweetest flowers forest eaten with cankars, & the ripest & yongest wits soonest ouergrownen with follies : if I chance among Courtiers, I wil tel thē, that as the star *Artophilex* is brightest, yet setteth soonest ; so their glories being most gorgeous, are dasht with sodainest ouerthrowes : if amōg schollers, I wil proue that their Philosophicall axiomes, their quiddities of Logicke, their aphorisms of art, are dissolued with this definit period *Omnia sub sole vanitas*. If amongst Louers, and with this the teares fell from his eyes, and the fighes flew from his hart, as if all should split again : If quoth he, (and he doubled his words with an Emphasis) I fall amōgft Louers, I will decypher to them that their God is a boy, as fond as he is blinde ; their Goddesse a woman, inconstant, false, / flattering, like the windes that rise in the shoares of

*Lepanthus*, which in the morning fend forth gusts frō the North, and in the Euening calmes from the West ; that their fancies are like Aprill showers, begun with a Sunne shine, & ended in a storme ; their passions déep hels, their pleasures *Chimeraes* portraitures ; fodaine ioyes that appearing like *Iuno*, are nothing when *Ixion* toucheth them but duskie & fading clowdes. Here he stopped, and tooke his scrip from his backe, and his bottle from his side, and with such cates as he had, as limons, apricocks and oliues, he began a palmers banquet, which digesting with a cup of wine well tēpred with water, after euerie draught he fighed out this *Nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via*. When he had taken his repast, casting vp his eyes to heauen, as beeing thankfull for his benefites and sorrowfull for his sinnes, falling into a déepe meditation, after hee had a while lien as a man in a Traunce, he started vp sodainly, and with a halfe chéered countenance fong out this Ode.

## The Palmers Ode.

*O*Lde Menalcus on a day,  
 As in field this shepherd lay,  
 Tuning of his oten pipe,  
 Which he hit with manie a stripe ;  
 Said to Coridon that hee  
 Once was yong and full of glee,

*Blithe and wanton was I then :  
 Such desires follow men.  
 As I lay and kept my sheepe,  
 Came the God that hateth sleepe,  
 Clad in armour all of fire,  
 Hand in hand with Queene Desire :  
 And with a dart that wounded nie,  
 Pearst my heart as I did lie :  
 That when I wooke I gan sweare, /  
 Phillis beautie palme did beare.  
 Vp I start, foorth went I,  
 With hir face to feede mine eye :  
 There I saw Desire sit,  
 That my heart with Loue had hit,  
 Laying foorth bright Beauties hookes  
 To intrap my gazing lookes.  
 Loue I did, and gan to woe,  
 Pray and sigh ; all would not doe :  
 Women when they take the toy  
 Couet to be counted coy.  
 Coy she was, and I gan court,  
 She thought Loue was but a sport.  
 Profound Hell was in my thought :  
 Such a paine Desire had wrought,  
 That I sued with sighes and teares :  
 Still ingrate she stopt hir eares,  
 Till my youth I had spent.  
 Last a passion of Repent,*

*Tolde me flat that Defire,  
 Was a brond of Loues fire,  
 Which consumeth men in thrall,  
 Vertue, youth, wit, and all.  
 At this sawe backe I start,  
 Bet Defire from my hart,  
 Shooke of Loue, and made an oth,  
 To be enemie to both.  
 Olde I was when thus I fled,  
 Such fond toyes as cloyde my head.  
 But this I learnd at Vertues gate,  
 The way to good is neuer late.*

Nunquam fera est ad bonos mores via.

As soone as he had ended his Ode, he fell to his old principle *Nunquam fera est*: and confirming it with a sigh, he / rose vp, & was ready to depart towards *Bergamo* to take vp his lodging, for the funne was declining towardses the West.

But I desirous to searck further into this passionate Palmer, crost him the way with this falutation: Palmer (for so thy apparell discouers) and penitent, if thy inward heart agrée with thy outward passions: if my questions may not aggruate thy grieffe, nor my demaund be tedious to thy trauels, let me craue of curtesie whither thou dost bend the end of thy pilgrimage, that if thou béest stept awry, I may direct thée, or if thou

knowest the countrey, I may wish *boone fortune* to thy iourney; for I haue all my life time coueted to be faithful to my friends and curteous to strangers? The Palmer amazed at my sodaine salutation stept backe and bent his browes, as if he feared some preiudice, or were offended at my presence; but when hee saw me weaponlesse, and without companie, and yet so affable in words, and *debonaire* in exterior curtesies as might importe a Gentleman, he deuoutly moued his bonnet of gray, and made this reply.

Gentleman (for no lesse you seeme) if the flower may be knowen by smel, or the man by his words. I am a Palmer, discouered by my gray, and a penitent, if you note my grieffe, which sorrow is as effectuell as my attire is little counterfeite. The direction of my iourney is not to *Ierusalem*: for my faith telles me, Christ can deaw as great fauour downe in *England* as in *Iericho*: and prayers are not heard for the place, but in the behalfe of the person hartilie repentant. My natiue home is *England*, the ende of my iourney is *Venice*, where I meane to visit an olde friend of mine, an Englishman, to whome I haue beene long time indebted, and nowe meane partely to repay with such store as I haue bought with hard experience. This night I will rest in the next village, and thus I hope fir you rest fatisfied.

This anfwere of the Palmer made mee the more defir/ rous to enquire into his ftate, that I entreted him I might be hoſte to ſuch a gueſt: and ſeeing I was reſident in *Bergamo* where that night he meant to harbour, ſuch lodging as a country Gentleman could afford, and ſuch cheere as ſuch a village might on the ſodaine yéelde, ſhould be at his commaund.

Well could this Palmer ſkill of courteſie, and returning mee many thankes, voucht of my proffer, and was willing to take my houſe for his Inne. As wee paſt on the way, we chaunced to fall into prattle thus. Sir (quoth I) if I might with many queſtions not be offenſive, I would faine be inquitivie to knowe, as you haue paſſed along *France*, *Germanie*, the *Rine*, and part of *Italie*, what you haue noted woorthie of memorie. Mooving his cappe as a man that was paſſing courteous, he answered thus: I tell you ſir (quoth he) as a fooliſh queſtion merites ſilence, ſo a familiar demaunde craues a friendly replie of duety, although *Zeno* the philoſopher counted it more honour to be a ſilent naturalliſt, than an eloquent Oratour. But as I am not a Gymnoſophiſt to iangle at every Sophiſticall Obiection, ſo I am not a ſeuere Stoicke to anſwere but by Syllables, and therefore thus to your queſtion.

After I had cut from *Douer* to *Calice*, I re-



membred what olde *Homer* writte of *Vlyffes*, that he coueted, not onely to see strange Countries, but with a deepe insight to haue a view into the manners of men : so I thought as I passed through *Paris*, not onlie to please mine eie, with the curious Architecture of the building, but with the diuerse disposition of the inhabitantes. I founde therefore the Court (for I aime first at the fayrest) to haue a King fit for so royall a Regiment, if hee had beene as perfect in true Religion, as polittique in Martiall Discipline: the Courtiers, they as *Aristippus* fawnde upon *Dyonisius*, turning like to the Cameleon into the likenesse of euerie Obiect that the King proffered to / their humorous conceits, for if the king smiled euerie one in the Court was in his iollitie, if he frownd, their plumes fell like the peacocks feathers, so that their outward preface depended on his inward passions. Generally so, but particularly thus ; the French Gentlemen are amorous, as soone perfwaded by the beauty of their mistresse, to make a braule, as for the maintenance of religion, to enter armes ; their eyes are like Salamander stones, that fier at the sight of euerie flame ; their hearts as queasie as the mineralls of *Ætna* that burne at the heate of the funne, and are quencht with the puffe of euerie winde. They count it Courtlike to spende their youth in courting of Ladies, and their age

in repenting of finnes, yet more forward in the one, than deuout in the other. They bandy glaunces vpon euery face, and as though they would approoue euery passion for a principle, they set downe the period with a déepe sigh: yet as the breath of a man vpon steele no sooner lighteth on but it leapeth off, is the beginning and ending of their loues. Thus much for their amours. Now for their arms, they be hardy souldiors and resolute. For their faith, friendship, religion, or other particular qualities, for there is a league betwixt vs & them: I wil spare to speak, leaft in being Satyricall, I should plod too far with *Diogenes*, or in flattering their faults or their follies, I should claw a fooles shoulder with *Dauus* in *Terence*: skipping therefore from them to the Germans. Nay stay fir (quoth I) before you passe the *Alpes*, giue me leaue to holde you an houre still in *Lions*: for though you be a Palmer and religious, yet I hope such deepe deuotion rested not in you, but an ounce of *Venus* fauours hung in your eies, and when you had spent the morning in orisons, you could in the afternoone lend a glaunce to a faire Lady. The egle soares not so hie in the aire, but he can spie a little fish in the sea, the sunne in *Cancer* goes retrog[r]ade, the coldest clime hath his summer, and *Apollo* was neuer so stoicall, but *semel in anno* he could let fall

a fmile ; and the moſt feuere\* . . . . .  
 Pilgrim or Palmer hath an eye as well as a hart,  
 and a looke to lende to beauty, as a thought to /  
 bend to Theologie : therefore I pray you, what  
 thinke you of the Frenchwomen? At this queſtion,  
 although his grautie was great, yet with a plesant  
 countenance he made this reply : Although fire  
 is hote as well in the coldeſt region of the North  
 as in the furtheſt Southerne paralell, the graſſe of  
 the ſame colour in *Egipt* as it is in *Iewrie*, and  
 women whereſoeuer they be bred, be *mala neceſſaria*,  
 yet though their generall eſſence bee all one as  
 comming from *Eua*, and therefore froward, in-  
 conſtant, light, amorous, deceitfull, and *quid non*,  
 better decyphered by *Mantuan* then I can make  
 deſcription of : yet as ſ̄ Diamonds in *India* bee  
 more hard then the Corniſh ſtones in *England* : as  
 the Margarites of the Weſt are more orient then  
 the Pearles of the South : ſo womens affections  
 are affected after the diſpoſition of the clime  
 wherein they are borne : although *Auicen* in his  
 Aphoriſmes ſets downe this concluſion, that thornes  
 no / where grow without pricks, nor nettles with-  
 out ſtinges : but leauing off this preamble, thus to  
 your queſtion. The Women in France generally  
 as concerning ſ̄ exterior lineaments of their outward

\* A leaf miſſing in exemplar. Here follow the two pages from  
 Edition of 1600, in the Bodleian Library.—G.

perfection, are beautifull, as beeing westernly teated neere great *Brittaine*, where Nature fittes and hatcheth beautious Paramours: yet although *natura naturans* hath shewed her cunning in their portraictures, as women that think nothing perfect that *Arte* hath not polished, they haue drugges of *Alexandria*, minerals of *Egypt*, waters from *Tharsus*, paintings from *Spaine*, and what to doe forsooth? To make them more beautifull then vertuous, and more pleasing in the eyes of men then delightfull in the sight of God: this is but their exterior vanity that blemisheth their inward vertues: if they haue any. But more to their interior inclination. Some, as if they were votaries vnto *Venus*, and at their natiuities had no other influence, take no pleasure but in amorous passions, no delight but in madrigals of Loue, wetting *Cupids* wings with rosewater, and tricking vp his quiuer with sweete perfumes, that set out their faces as Foulers doe their daring glassses, that the Larkes that soare highest, may stoope soonest, and assoone as the poore louing fooles are wrapt within their nets, then they sue with fighes, & plead with Sonnets, faine teares, and paynt out passions to winne her, that seeming to bee coy, comes at the first / lure: for when they see young nouices intrapt, then the French dames are like to the people *Hyperborei*, that spurneth liquorice with

their feete, secretly flake their hunger with the iuyce thereof; so they outwardly séeming to contemne their futors motions, stand in deadly feare, leaft they should leaue off theyr amorous paffions: fo that they haue loue in their eye-liddes, fo slenderly tacked on by fancy, as it drops off with euery dreame, and is fhakte off with euery vaine flumber. Some of them are as *Sapho* was, fubtile to allure, and flippery to deceiue, hauing their hearts made of waxe ready to receiue euery impreffion, not content till they haue as many louers as their hearts haue entrances for loue, and thofe are like to pumice ftones that are light and full of holes. Some are as inconstant as *Cressida*, that be *Troylus* neuer fo true, yet, out of fight out of mind: and as foone as *Diomedes* begins to court, fhée like *Venetian* traffique is for his penny, *currant á currendo*, fterling coyne paffable from man to man in way of exchange. Others are as *Lidia*, cruell, whose harts are hammered in the forge of pride, thinking themfelues too good for all, and none woorthy of them, and yet oft times neftling all day in the Sunne with the Béele, are at night contented with a cowherd for fhelter. Thefe haue eyes of *Bafilifkes*, that are preiudiciall to euery obieft, and hearts of *Adamant* not any way to be pierced: and yet I thinke, not dying maides, nor leading Apes in hell: for *Veftaes* facrifice ceafed

long since in *Rome*, & virgins are as rare as black Swans: opportunity is a fore plea in *Venus* court, able, I tell you, to ouerthrow the coyest she that is. I could inferre more particular instances, and distinguish more at large of the French Gentlewomen: but \* . . . . . let me leaue them to their humorous vanities, and resolue our selues, that *Ireland* doth not onely bring forth wolues, nor *Egypt* Crocodiles, nor *Barbarie* Leopards, nor *France* such qualified women, but as the earth yéeldes wéedes as wel in the lowest valleys, as in the highest mountains, so women are vniuersally *mala necessaria*, wherefoeuer they be eyther bred or brought vp. With this conclusiue period he breathed him: & I could not but smile to see the palmer shake his head at the fondnesse of women as a man that had bin galled with their ingratitude. Well, after he had pawfed a little, he left *France*, and began to talke of *Germany*, and that was thus: After I had left *Lions*, I passed by the *Alpes* and coasted into *Germany*, where, as I found the Country seated vnder a cold clime, so I perceiued the people high-minded and fuller of wordes than of courtesie, giuen more to drincke than to deuotion: and yet fundry places stuffed with schismes and heresies, as people that delight to be factious: there might you see their interior vanities more

\* We return now to exemplar in B. M., 1590.—G.

than their outward apparell did importe, and oft times their vaunts more than their manhoode : for loue, as I saw *Venus* of no great accompt, yet shee had there a temple, and though they did not beautifie it with iewels, they plainly powred forth such Orizons as did bewray, though they could not court it as the French did with art, yet their lust was no lesse, nor their liues more honest. Because the people were little affable, I grewe not so farre inquisitiue into their manners and customes, but *sicco pede* past them ouer, so that I trauelled vp as farre as *Vienna*, where I saw a thing worthie of memorie. In a Valley betweene two high mountaines topt with trees of marueilous verdure, whereby ran a fountaine pleasant as well for the murmure of the streames, as for the sweetenefse of waters, there was scituated a litle lodge artificialy built, and at the doore, a man of verie great grauitie and no lesse age, fate leaning vpon his staffe, so to take the / benefit of the aire & the sunne : his haire were as white as the threeds of filke in *Arabia*, or as the Palme trees on the mount *Libanus* ; many yeeres had made him furrows in his face, where experience fate and seemed to tel forth oracles : deuotion apered in his habite, & his outward cloth discouered his inward heart, that the old Hermit seemed in the world a resolute despiser of the world : standing a while, and won-

dring at this olde man, at laſt al reuerence doone that his yeeres did require, or my youth was bound vnto, after ſalutatiōs, I questioned him of the order of his life, who answered me with ſuch curteſie and humilitie as I perceiued in his words the perfit *Idea* of a mortified man : after fundry queſtions broken with *pro* & *contra*, at laſt he tooke me by the hand & caried me into his cell, where I found not thoſe *Vtenſilia* which *Tully* ſayes are neceſſary to be in euery cottage, but I found books and that of Theologie, a drinking cup, and that was full of water: a dead mans ſcul, an houre glaſſe, and a Bible, thus only was his houſe garniſhed. After he had ſate downe a litle, he looked me very earneſtly in the face, as a man that had ſome ſkil in phiſognomy, to cenſure of the inward qualities by the outward appearāce : at laſt in rough hie Dutch verſes he thus breathed out his opinion, which I drew thus into blancke verſe.

*The Hermites firſt exordium.*

*Here looke my ſonne for no vaine glorious ſhews  
Of royall apparition for the eye ;  
Humble and meeke beſitteth men of yeeres.  
Behold my cell, built in a ſilent ſhade,  
Holding content for pouertie and peace,  
And in my lodge is fealtie and faith,  
Labour and loue, vnited in one league.*



*I want not, for my minde affordeth wealth ;  
I know not enuie, for I climbe not hie :  
Thus do I liue, and thus I meane to die. |*

Then hee stept to his shelve, and takes downe a deaths head, whereon looking as a man that meditated vpon some déepe matter, he shooke his head, and the teares standing in his eyes, he profecuted his matter thus.

*If that the world presents illusions,  
Or Sathan seekes to puffe me vp with pompe,  
As man is fraile and apt to follow pride :  
Then see my sonne where I haue in my cell,  
A dead mans scull, which cals this straight to mind  
That as this is, so must my ending be.  
When then I see that earth to earth must passe,  
I sigh, and say, all flesh is like to grasse.*

After he had thus explained the reason why he kept the dead mans scull in his Cell, he reacht to his hower glasse, and vpon that he began thus to descant.

*If care to liue, or sweete delight in life,  
As mans desire to see out manie daies,  
Drawes me to listen to the flattering world :  
Then see my glasse which swiftly out doth runne,  
Comparde to man, who dies ere he begins.  
This tells me, time slackes not his poasting course,*

*But as the glasse runnes out with euerie hower,  
Some in their youth, some in their weakeſt age,  
All ſure to die, but no man knowes his time.  
By this I thinke how vaine a thing is man,  
Whoſe longeſt life is likened to a ſpan.*

Laſtly, he tooke his Bible in his hand, where-  
vpon leaning his arme he amplified thus.

*When Sathan ſeekes to fiſt me with his wiles,  
Or proudly dares to giue a fierce aſſault,  
To make a ſhipwracke of my faith with feares :/  
Then arme at all points to withſtand the foe  
With holy armour : heres the martiall ſword :  
This booke, this bible, this two edged blade,  
Whoſe ſweete content pierceth the gates of hell :  
Decyphring lawes and diſcipline of warre,  
To ouerthrowe the ſtrength of Sathans iarre.*

Thus the Hermite diſcouered to mee the ſecrets  
of his Cell : and after, that I ſhould be priuie to all  
his Patheticall conceipts, he brought foorth a fewe  
rootes, and ſuch ſimple diet as he had, to confirme  
that he tyed Nature euerie waye within hir limits :  
wondring at the methode he vſed in his Cell, after  
I had taken my repaſt with him, as we met cour-  
teouſlie, we parted friendly ; he with exhortations  
to beware of youths follies ; I with thankes and  
reuerence to his aged yeares, for his graue and  
fatherly perſwaſion : ſo I went from his Cell to

*Vienna*, and from thence coasted vp into the borders of *Italy*.

The Palmer had scarce named *Italy*, but wee were come to my house, where I gaue him such intertainment, as either the abilitie of my substaunce, the plentie of the Countrey, or the shortnesse of the time could afford: and because I would euerie way grace him, I brought downe my wife to giue him a royall welcome; a fauour seldome shewed in *Italy*: yet because hee was a Palmer and his profession valued beautie at a light price, I did him that grace. To be short, at last we fate downe to supper, and there past the time with such pleasing chatt, as the pleasant Palmer pleased to conferre vpon. Supper done, I desired the Palmer to discourse (if it were not offensiue) what reason moued him to direct his Pilgrimage onely to *Venice*? Rising himselfe vp with a smiling countenance he made this reply.

Courteous Gentleman, for so much your affable and liberall disposition doth approoue. *Iupiter* when hee was / interteined by poore *Baucis* accounted ingratitude so heynous, as hee turnde their cottage to a Temple, and made them Sacrificers at his Altars: Hospitalitie is so precious, as no price may value. Then, if I should not graunt anie lawful demaund, I might seeme as little pliant to humanitie, as you lyable to courtesie: and therefore

if the Gentlewoman your wife and you will fit vp to heare the discourfes of a traoueller, I will firft rehearfe you an *English* Historie acted and euented in my Countrey of *England*: but for that the Gentleman is yet liuing I will shadowe his name, although I manifeft his follies; and when I haue made relation I will fhew why I directed the courfe of my Pilgrimage onely to *Venice*.

My Wife by her countenance ſeemed to be merueilous content, and my ſelfe kept ſilence: Whereupon the Palmer began as followeth. /

*The Palmers Tale.*

**I**N thoſe dayes wherein *Palmerin* reigned King of great *Britaine*, famous for his déedes of Chiualrie, there dwelled in the Citie of *Caerbranck*; a Gentleman of an ancient houſe, called *Franceſco*, a man whoſe parentage though it were worſhipfull, yet it was not indued with much wealth: in ſo much that his learning was better than his reuenues, & his wit more beneficiall than his ſubſtance. This *Signor Franceſco* deſirous to bend the courſe of his compaſſe to ſome peaceable Port, ſpread no more cloath in the winde than might make eaſie faile, leaſt hoyſting vp too haſtely aboute the maine yeard,

some sodaine gust might make him founder in the déep. Though he were yong yet he was not rash with *Icarus* to soare into the skie, but to crie out with olde *Dedalus*, *Medium tenere tutissimum* : treading his shooe without anie slip. He was so generally loued of the Citizens, that the richest Marchant or grauest Burghmaster would not refuse to graunt him his daughter, in mariage, hoping more of his insuing fortunes, than of his present substance. At last, casting his eye on a Gentlemans daughter that dwelt not far frō *Caer-branck*, he fell in loue, and profecuted his sute with such affable courtesie, as the maide considering the vertue and wit of the man, was content to set vp her rest with him, so that her fathers consent might be at the knitting vp of the match. *Francesco* thinking himselfe cocksure, as a man that hoped his credite in the Citie might carrie away more than a country Gentlemans daughter, finding her father on a day at fit opportunitie, he made the motion about the grant of his daughters / marriage. The olde churle that listened with both eares to such a question, did not in this *in utramuis aurem dormire* : but leaning on his elbow, made present aunswere, that hir dowrie required a greater feoffment than his lands were able to affoord. And vpon that, without farther debating of the matter, he rose vp, and hied him home, whether as soone

as he came, he called his daughter before him, whose name was *Ijabel*, to whom he vttered these words ; Why, Huswife quoth he, are you so idle tasked, that you stand vppon thornes while you haue a husband? are you no sooner hatched with the Lapwing, but you will runne away with the shell on your head? Soone prickes the trée that will proue a thorne, and a Girle that loues too soone, wil repent too late. What a husband? Why the Maides in *Rome* durst not looke at *Venus* temple till they were thirtie, nor went they vnmasked till they were married ; that neither their beauties might allure other, nor they glaunce their eyes on euerie wanton. I tell thée fond Girle, when *Nilus* ouerfloweth before his time, *Ægipt* is plagued with a dearth: the trées that blossom in Februarie are nipped with the frosts in May ; vntimely frutes had neuer good fortune, & young Gentlewomen that are wooed and won ere they be wise, sorrow and repent before they be olde. What féest thou in *Francesco*, that thine eye must choose, and thy heart must fancie? Is he beautifull? Why fond Girle, what the eye liketh at morne, it hateth at night: Loue is like a bauyn, but a blaze ; and Beautie, why how can I better compare it than to the gorgeous Cedar, that is onely for shew and nothing for profite ; to the apples of *Tantalus*, that are precious to the eye,

and dust in the hand ; to the starre *Artophilex*, that is most bright, but fitteth not for anie compasse ; so yong men that stand vpon their outward portraiture, I tel thee they are preiudicial : *Demophon* was faire, but how dealt he with *Phyllis* ? *Aeneas* was a braue man but a dissembler : fond girle, all are but little worth, if they be not welthie. And I pray thee, what substance hath *Frà/cesco* to endue thee with ? Haft thou not heard, that want breakes amitie, that loue beginneth in golde and endeth in beggerie ; that such as marie but to a faire face, tie theselues oft to a foule bargain ? And what wilt thou doo with a husband that is not able to maintain thee ? buy forfooth a dram of pleasure with a pound of sorrowe, and a pint of content with a whole tunne of preiudiciall displeasures ? But why doo I cast stonnes into the aire, or breath my words into the winde ; when to perfwade a woman from her wil is to roll *Sisfphus* stone ; or to hale a headstrong Girle from loue, is to tie the Furies againe in fetters. Therefore hufwife, to preuent all misfortunes I will be your Iayler. And with that, he carried her in and shut her vp in his owne chamber, not giuing her leaue to depart but when his key gaue her license : yet at last she so cunningly dissembled, that she gat thus farre libertie, not to bee close prisoner, but to walke about the house ; yet euerie night hee shut

vp her cloathes, that no nightly feare of her escape might hinder his broken slumbers.

Where leauing her, let vs returne to *Francesco*; who to his sorrowe heard of all these hard fortunes: and beeing pensive was full of manie passions, but almost in despayre; as a man that durst not come nigh her Fathers doore, nor send anie letters whereby to comfort his Mistresse, or to lay anie plot of her libertie: for no sooner anie stranger came thether, but hee suspicious they came from *Francesco*, first sent vp his Daughter into her chamber; then as watchfull as *Argus* with all his eyes, he pried into euerie particular gesture and behaiour of the partie; and if anie ielous humour tooke him in the head, he would not onely bee verie inquisitive with cutting questions, but would straine courtesies and search them very narrowly, whether they had anie letters or no to his Daughter *Isabel*.

This narrow inquisition made the poore Gentleman almost franticke, that he turned ouer *Anacreon*, *Quid de Arte amandi*, and all books that might teach him any sleights / of loue: but for all their principles, his own wit serued him for the best shift, and that was happely begun & fortunately ended thus; It chaunced that as hee walked thus in his muses, fetching the compasse of his conceipt beyonde the Moone, he met with a poore woman



that from dore to dore fought her liuing by charitie. The woman as her custome was, began her *exordium* with I pray good Master, & so foorth, hoping to finde the Gentleman as liberall, as hee was full of gracious fauours : neither did she misse of her imagination ; for he that thought her likely to be drawn on to the executing of his purpose, conceived this, that golde was as good as glew to knit her to anie practise whatsoeuer, & therefore out with his purse, and clapt her in the hand with a French crowne. This vnaccustomed reward made her more frank of her curtsies, that euerie rag reacht the Gentleman a reuerence with promise of many prayers for his health. He that harped on another string tooke the woman by the hand, & sitting down vpon the gréen grasse, discourst vnto her from point to point the beginning & sequell of his loues, and how by no meanes (except by her) he could conuay anie letter. The begger desirous to do the Gentleman anie pleasure, said shee was readie to take anie paines that might redound to his content. Whereupon he replied thus ; Then mother, thou shalt goe to yonder Abbey which is her fathers house, & when thou comest thether vse thy wonted eloquence to intreate for thine almes: if the master of the house be present, shewe thy passport, and seeme verie passionate: but if he be absent or out of ŷ way, then, oh then mother, looke

about if thou ſeeſt *Diana* masking in the ſhape of a Virgin, if thou ſpieſt *Venus*, nay one more beautifull than loues goddeſſe, & I tell thee ſhe is my loue faire *Iſabel*, whom thou ſhalt diſcerne from her other ſiſter, thus: her viſage is faire, conteining as great reſemblance of vertue as liniaments of beautie, & yet I tell thee ſhe is ful of fauour, whether thou reſpects the outward portraiture or inward perfection: her eye like the diamond, & ſo / pointed that it pearceth to the quick, yet ſo chaſt in the motion as therein is ſcene as in a myrrour courteſie tempred with a vertuous diſdaine: her countenance is the verie map of modeſtie, and to giue thee a more neere marke, if thou findeſt her in the way, thou ſhalt ſee her more liberall to beſtow, than thou pitifull to demaund: her name is *Iſabel*: to her from me ſhalt thou carrie a letter, fouled vp euerie way like thy paſport, with a greaſie backſide, and a great ſeale. If cunningly and cloſely thou canſt thus conuey vnto her the tenure of my minde, when thou bringeſt mee an anſwere, I wil giue thee a brace of Angels. The poore woman was glad of this proffer, and therevpon promiſed to venter a ioynt, but ſhee would further him in his loues: wherevpon ſhe followed him to his chamber, & the whiles he writ a letter to this effect.

*Signor Francesco to faire Ifabel.*

WHEN I note faire *Ifabel* the extremitie of thy fortunes, and measure the passions of my Loue, I finde that *Venus* hath made thee constant to requit my miseries ; and that where the greatest onset is giuen by fortune, there is strongest defence made by affection : for I heard that thy father suspitious, or rather ielous of our late vnited simpatie, dooth watch like *Argus* ouer *Io*, not suffering thee to passe beyonde the reach of his eye, vnles (as he thinkes) thou shouldest ouerreach thy selfe. His minde is like the Tapers in *Ianus* Temple, that sette once on fire, burne till they consume themselues; his thoughts like the Sunne beames, that searce euerie secrete. Thus watching thee hee ouerwaketh himselfe ; and yet I hope profiteth as little as they which gaze on the flames of *Aetna*, which vanish out of their sight in smoake.

I haue heard them say (*faire Isabell*) that as the Diamondes are tryed by cutting of Glasse, the Topace by byding the force of the Andueile, the Sethin Woode / by the hardnesse, so womens excellence is discouered in their constancie. Then if the periode of all their vertues consist in this, that they take in loue by months, and let it slip by minutes, that as the Tortoise they creepe pedentim, and when they come to their rest, will hardly be remooued. I hope thou wilt confirme

in thy loues the very patterne of femenine loyaltie, hauing no motion in thy thoughts, but fancie, and no affection, but to thy *Francisco*. In that I am stopped from thy fight, I am depriued of the chiefeft Organ of my life, hauing no sense in my selfe, perfect, in that I want the viewe of thy perfection, ready with sorrow to perish in dispayre, if resolu'd of thy constancie, I did not triumph in hope. Therefore nowe restes it in thee to salue all these fores, and prouide medicines for these daungerous maladies, that our passions appeas'd, we may end our harmony in the faithfull vnion of two hearts. Thou seest loue hath his shifts, and *Venus* quiddities are most subtill sophistry, that he which is touched with beauty, is euer in league with opportunitie: these principles are prooued by the messenger, whose state discouers my restless thoughts, impatient of any longer repulse. I haue therefore sought to ouermatch thy father in pollicie, as he ouerstraines vs in ieloufie, and seeing hee seekes it, to let him find a knot in a rush; as therefore I haue sent thee the summe of my passions in the forme of a passport, so returne mee a reply wrapt in the same paper, that as wee are forced to couer our deceits in one shift, so hereafter we may vnite our loues in one Simpathie: Appoint what I shall doe to compasse a priuate conference. Thinke I will account of the seas as *Leander*, of the wars

as *Troilus*, of all dangers as a man resolved to attempt any perill, or breake any prejudice for thy sake. Say, when, and where I shall meete thee, and so as I begunne passionately, I breake off abruptly. Farewell.

Thine in fatall resolution

*Seigneur Francisco.* /

AFTER hee had written the letter, and dispatcht the messenger, hir mind was so fixed on the brace of Angels, that she stirred her old stumps till she came to the house of *Seigneur Fregoso*, who at that instant was walkt abroad to take view of his pastures. She no sooner beganne her methode of begging with a solempne prayer, and a *pater noster*. But *Isabell*, whose deuotion was euer bent to pity the poore, came to the doore, to see the necessity of the party, who beganne to salute her thus. Faire Mistresse, whose vertues exceede your beauties, and yet I doubt not but you deeme your perfection equiuolent wyth the rarest paragons in *Brittaine*, as your eye receiues the obiect of my miserie, so let your heart haue an insight into my extremities, who once was young, and then faouored by fortunes, now olde and crossed by the destinies, driuen when I am weakest to the wal, and when I am worst forst to holde the candle. Seeing then the faultes of my youth hath forst the fall of mine age, and I am

driuen in the winter of mine yeeres to abide the brunt of al stormes, let the plenty of your youth pity the want of my decrepitate state ; and the rather, because my fortune was once as hie as my fall is nowe lowe : for prooffe, sweete Mistresse, see my pasporte, wherein you shall finde many passions and much patience : at which period, making a courtesie, her very ragges seemed to giue *Isabell* reuerence. She hearing the beggar insinuate with such a sensible preamble, thought the woman had had some good partes in her, and therefore tooke her certificate, which as soone as she had opened, and that she perceiued it was *Franciscoes* hand, she smiled, and yet bewrayed a passion with a blush. So that stepping from the woman, she went into her chamber, where shee read it ouer with such patheticall impreffions a[s] euery motion was intangled with a dilemma : for on the one side, the loue of *Francisco* grounded more on his interiour vertues than his exterior beauties, gaue such fierce assaults to the bulwarke of her affection, as the / Fort was ready to bee yeilded vp, but that the feare of her fathers displeasure armed with the instigations of nature draue her to meditate thus with her selfe.

Now *Isabell*, Loue and Fortune hath brought thee into a Labyrinth, thy thoughts are like to *Ianus* pictures, that present both peace and warre, and thy mind like *Venus Anuile*, whereon is ham-

mered both Feare and Hope. Sith then the chance lieth in thine own choice, do not with *Medea* see and allow of the best, and then follow the worst: but of two extremes, if they be *Immediata*, choose that may haue leaft preiudice and most profite. Thy father is aged, and wise, and many yeeres hath taught him much experience. The olde Foxe is more subtile than the young Cub, the buck more skilfull to choose his foode than the yong fawnes. Men of age feare and foresee that which youth leapeth at with repentance. If then his graue wisdom exceeds thy greene wit, and his ripened frutes thy sprowting blossoms, thinke if he speake for thy auaille, as his principles are perfect, so they are grounded on Loue and Nature. It is a neere collop, saies he, is cut out of the owne flesh, and the stay of thy fortunes, is the staffe of his life: no doubt he sees with a more piercing iudgement into the life of *Francesco*: for thou ouercome with fancie, censurest of all his actions with partialitie. *Francesco*, though hee be young and beautifull, yet his reuenues are not answerable to his faouours: the Cedar is faire, but vnfruitfull, the *Volgo* a bright streame, but without fish: men couet rather to plant the Oliue for profite, than the Alder for beautie, and young Gentlewomen shoulde rather fancie to liue, than affect to lust: for loue wythout Landes, is like to a fier wythout fewell, that for a

while sheweth a bright blaze, and in a moment dyeth in his owne cinders. Dooft thou thinke this *Isabell*, that thine eye may not surfeit so with beautie, that the minde shall vomite vp repentaunce: yes, for the fairest Rofes haue prickes, the purest Lawnes / their moles, the brightest Diamonds their crackes, and the most beautifull men of the most imperfect conditions, for nature hauing care to pollish the body so farre, ouerweenes her selfe in her excellencie, that shee leaues their mindes imperfect. Whither now *Isabell*, into absurd Aphorismes? what can thy father perfwade thee to this, that the most glorious shelles haue not the most orient margarites, that the purest flowers haue not the most perfect fauours, that men, as they excell in proportion of bodie, so they exceede in perfection of minde? Is not nature both curious and absolute, hiding the most vertuous mindes in the most beautifull couertures. Why what of this fonde girle? suppose these premises be granted, yet they inferre no conclusion: for suppose hee be beautifull and vertuous, and his wit is equall with his parentage, yet hee wantes wealth to maintaine loue, and therefore sayes olde *Fregose* not worthy of *Isabels* loue. Shall I thē tie my affection to his lands or to his liniamēts? to his riches or his qualities? are *Venus* altars to be filled with gold or loialty of harts? Is the Simpathie of *Cupids* confistorie vnited



in the abundance of coyne? Or the absolute perfection of constancie? Ah *Ifabell*, thinke this, that loue brooketh no exception of want, that where fancie displayes her couloure there alwayes eyther Plentie keepes her Court, or else Patience so tempers euery extreame, that all defectes are supplied with content. Vpon this, as hauing a farther reach, and a deéper insight, she stept hastily to her standish, and writte him this answere.

*Ifabell to Francisco, health.*

**A**Lthough the nature of a father, and the duetie of a childe might mooue me resolutely to reiect thy letters, yet I receyued them, for that thou art *Francisco* and I *Ifabell*, who were once priuate in affection, as now we are distant in places. But know, my father, whose / commaund to me is a law of constraint, fettes downe this censure, that loue without wealth is like to a Cedar tree without frute, or to corne sown in the sands that withereth for want of moisture: and I haue reason *Francesco* to deeme of snow by the whiteneffe, and of trees by the blossoms. The olde man whose wordes are Oracles tells me that loue that entreth in a moment, flieth out in a minute, that mens affections is like the deawe vpon a christall, which no sooner lighteth on, but it leapeth off: their eyes with euery glauce make a newe choice, and euery looke can com-

maunde a figh, hauing their heartes like Saltpeter, that fiereth at the first, and yet prooueth but a flash, their thoughts reaching as high as Cedars, but as brittle as rods that breake with euery blast: had *Carthage* beene bereft of so famous a *Virago*: if the beauteous *Troian* had beene as constant as he was comely? Had the Queene of Poetry beene pinched with so many passions, if the wanton Ferriman had beene as faithfull as he was faire. No *Francesco*, and therefore seeing the brightest blossoms are pestred with most caterpillers, the sweetest Roses wyth the sharpest prickes, the fairest Cambricks with the fowlest staines, and men with the best proportion, haue commonly least perfection. I may feare to swallowe the hooke, least I finde more bane in the confection, than pleasure in the baite. But here let me breath, and with sighes foresee mine owne follie. Women, poor soules, are like to the Harts in *Calabria*, that knowing *Distannum* to be deadly, yet bruse on it with greedinesse, resembling the fish *Mugra*, that seeing the hooke bare, yet swallowes it with delight, so women foreseee, yet doo not preuent, knowing what is profitable, yet not eschewing the preiudice: so *Francesco* I see thy beauties, I knowe thy want, and I feare thy vanities, yet can I not but allowe of all, were they the woorst of all, because I finde in my minde this principle; in Loue is no lacke. What should I

*Francesco* couet to dally with the Mouſe when the Cat / ſtands by, or fill my letter full of needleſſe ambages when my father like *Argos* ſetteth a hundred eies to ouerpry my actions: while I am writing thy meſſenger ſtands at the doore praying. Therefore leaſt I ſhoulde holde her too long in her orifons, or keepe the poore man too long in ſuſpence; thus briefly. Be vpon Thursday next at night hard by the Orchard vnder the greateſt Oake, where expect my comming, and prouide for our ſafe paſſage : for ſtood all the worlde on the one ſide, and thou on the other, *Francesco* ſhould be my guide to direct me whither hee pleaſed. Faile not then, vnleſſe thou bee falſe to her that would haue life faile, ere ſhe falſifie faith to thee.

*Not hir owne, becauſe thine,  
Iſabell.*

AS ſoone as ſhee had diſpatcht her letter, ſhee came downe, and deliuered the letter folded in forme of a paſport to the meſſenger, giuing her after her accuſtomed manner an almes, and cloſely clapt her in the fiſt with a brace of Angelles, the wooman thanking her good Maifter, and her good miſtreſſe, giuing the houſe her benifon, hied her backe againe to *Francesco*, whō ſhe found ſitting ſollitary in his chamber : no ſooner did he ſpie hir, but flinging out of his chaire, he changed colour

as a man in a doubtfull extasie what should betide : yet conceyuing good hope by her countenance, who smiled more at the remembrance of her reward than at any other conceit, he tooke the letter and read it, wherein he found his humour so fitted, that he not only thanked the messenger, but gaue her all the money in his purse, so that she returned so highly gratified, as neuer after she was founde to exercise her old occupation. But leauing her to the hope of her hufwifrie, againe to *Francesco*, who seeing the constant affection of his mistresse, that neither the sower lookes of her father, nor his hard threats could afright her, to make change of her fancie, that no disafter fortune could driue hir to make shipwracke of her fixed affection, that the blustering stormes of aduersitie might assault, but not sacke the forte of her constant resolution, hee fell into this pleasing passion: Women (quoth he) whie as they are heauens wealth, so they are earthes myracles, framed by nature to despight beauty, adorned wyth the singlaritie of proportion, to shrowde the excellence of all perfection, as farre exceeding men in vertues as they, excell them in beauties, resembling Angells in qualities, as they are, like to gods in perfectnesse, being purer in minde than in mould, and yet made of the puritie of man : iust they are, as giuing loue her due; constant, as holding Loyaltie more pretious

than life; as hardly to be drawn from vnited affection, as the Salamanders fro the cauerns of *Ætna*. Tush quoth *Francesco*, what should I say they be women? and therefore the continents of all excellence. In this pleafant humour he passed away the time, not slacking his bufineffe for pro- uifion againft thurfday at night; to the care of which affaires let vs leaue him and returne to *Ifabell*, who after fhee had sent her letter fell into a great dumpe, entring into the confideration of mens inconstancie, and of the fickleneffe of their fancies, but all thefe meditations did fort to no effect; whereupon fitting downe, fhe tooke her Lute in her hand, and fung this Ode.

*Ifabells Ode.*

*Sitting by a riuer fide,  
Where a filent streame did glide,  
Banckt about with choice flowers,  
Such as spring from Aprill showers,  
When faire Iris fmiling sheaws |  
All her riches in her dewes :  
Thicke leaued trees fo were planted,  
As nor arte nor nature wanted :  
Bordring all the broke with shade,  
As if Venus there had made  
By Floraes wile a curious bowre  
To dally with her paramoure.*

*At this current as I gazde,  
Eies intrapt, mind amazde,  
I might see in my ken,  
Such a flame as fireth men:  
Such a fier as doth frie,  
With one blaze both heart and eie:  
Such a heate as dooth proue  
No heate like to heate of loue.  
Bright she was, for twas a she  
That tracde hir steps towards me:  
On her head she ware a bay,  
To fence Phœbus light away:  
In hir face one might descrie  
The curious beauty of the skie:  
Her eies carried darts of fier,  
Feathred all with swift defier,  
Yet foorth these fierie darts did passe,  
Pearled teares as bright as glasse,  
That wonder twas in her eie  
Fire and water should combine:  
If th' old saw did not borrow,  
Fier is loue, and water sorrow.  
Downe she sate pale and sad,  
No mirth in hir lookes she had,  
Face and eies shewd distresse,  
Inward fighes discourst no lesse:  
Head on hand might I see  
Elbow leaned on hir knee:*

*Last ſhe breathed out this ſaw, |*  
*Oh that loue hath no law ;*  
*Loue inforceth with constraint,*  
*Loue delighteth in complaint,*  
*Who ſo loues hates his life :*  
*For loues peace is mindes ſtrife.*  
*Loue doth feede on beauties fare,*  
*Euerie diſh ſawſt with care :*  
*Chieffy women, reaſon why,*  
*Loue is hatcht in their eye :*  
*Thence it ſteppeth to the hart,*  
*There it poyſoneth euerie part :*  
*Minde and heart, eye and thought,*  
*Till ſweete loue their woes hath wrought.*  
*Then repentant they gan crie,*  
*Oh my heart that trowed mine eye.*  
*Thus ſhe ſaid and then ſhe roſe,*  
*Face and minde both full of woes :*  
*Flinging thence, with this ſaw,*  
*Fie on loue that hath no law.*

Having finiſhed her Ode, ſhe heard that her father was come in ; and therefore leauing hir amorous inſtruments, ſhe fell to her labour, to confirme the olde prouerbe in her fathers ielous head, *Otia ſi tollas, periere Cupidinis arcus*: but as warye as ſhe was, yet the old gooſe could ſpie the goſling winke, and woulde not by anie

meanes trust her, but vsed his accustomed manner of restraint : yet as it is impossible for the smoake to be concealed, or fire to be suppressed; so *Fregoso* coulde by no subtile driftes so warely watch his transformed *Io*, but she found a *Mercurie* to release her. For vpon the thursday lying in her bed with little intent to sleepe, she offered manie sighes to *Venus* that she would be Oratresse to *Morpheus*, that some dead slumbers might possesse all the house ; which fel out accordingly, so that at midnight she rose vp & finding her apparell shut vp, she was faine to goe without hose, onely in her smocke / and her peticoate with her fathers hat and an old cloake. Thus attired like *Diana* in her night géeere, shee marcheth downe softly: where she found *Francesco* readie with a priuate and familiar friend of his to watch her comming forth, who casting his eye aside, & séeing one in a hat and a cloake, suspecting some treacherie drew his sword, at which *Isabel* smiling, she incountred him thus.

Gentle sir, if you be as valiant as you séeme cholaricke, or as martiall as you would be thought hardie : set not vpon a weaponlesse woman, leaft in thinking to triumph in so meane a conquest, you be preiudicte with the taint of cowardise. Twas neuer yet read, that warlicke *Mars* drew his faulchion against louely *Venus*, were her offence neuer [so] great, or his choller neuer so much. Therefore



Gentleman if you be the man I take you, *Ifabels Francesco*, leaue off your armes and fall to amours, and let your parlée in them be as short, as the night is filent, and the time dangerous.

*Francesco* séeing it was the Paramour of his affections, let fall his sword, and caught her in his armes, readie to fall in a swound by a sodaine extasie of ioy : at laft recouering his senses, he encountred her thus.

Faire *Ifabel*, Natures ouermatch in beautie, as you are *Dianas* superior in vertue : at the sight of this attire, I drew my sword, as fearing some priuie foe ; but as soone as the view of your perfection glaunched as an obiect to mine eye, I let fall mine armes, trembling as *Asteon* did, that he had dared too farre in gazing against so gorgeous a Goddesse : yet readie in the defence of your swéet selfe, and rather than I would loose so rich a prize, not onely to take vp my weapons, but to incoüter hand to hand with the stoutest champion in the world. Sir (quoth she) these protestations are now bootlesse : and therefore to bee briefe, thus (and with that the teares trickled downe the vermilion of her chéeks, and she blubbred out this passion) O *Francesco*, thou maist see by my attire the depth of my fancie, and in these homely roabes maist thou noate the rechlesnesse of my fortunes, / that for thy loue haue straind a note too

high in loue. I offend nature as repugnant to my father, whose displeasure I haue purchast to please thee ; I haue giuen a finall farewell to my friends, to be thy familiar ; I haue lost all hope of preferment, to confirme the simparchie of both our desires : Ah *Francesco*, see I come thus poore in apparell, to make thee rich in content. Now if hereafter (oh let me sigh at that, least I be forced to repent too late) when thy eye is glutted with my beautie, and thy hotte loue prooued soone cold, thou beginst to hate hir that thus loueth thee, and proue as *Demophon* did to *Phyllis*, or as *Aeneas* did to *Dido* : what then may I doo reiected, but accurse mine owne folly, that hath brought me to such hard fortunes. Giue me leaue *Francesco*, to feare what may fall : for men are as inconstant in performance, as cunning in practises. She could not fully discourse what she was about to vtter ; but he broke off with this protestation. Ah *Isabel* although the windes of *Lepanthos* are euer inconstant, the Chriferoll euer brittle, the Polype euer changeable ; yet measure not my minde by others motions, nor the depth of my affection by the fleeting of others fancies : for as there is a Topace that will yeeld to euerie stamp, so there is an Emerald that will yeeld to no impression. The selfe same *Troy*, as it had an *Aeneas* that was fickle, so it had a *Troilus* that was con-

ftant. *Greece* had a *Piramus*, as it had a *Demophon*; and though some haue béen ingratefull, yet accuse not al to be vnthankful: for when *Francesco* shall let his eye slip frō thy beauty, or his thoughts from thy qualities, or his heart from thy vertues, or his whole selfe from euer honouring thée: then shal heauen cease to haue starres, the earth trées, the world Elements, and euerie thing reuerfed shall fall to their former Chaos.

Why then (quoth *Isabel*) to horsebacke, for feare the faith of two such Louers be impeached by my fathers wakefull ielouzie. And with that (poore woman) halfe naked as she was, she mounted, and as fast as horse would / pace away they post towards a towne in the said Countrey of *Britaine* called *Dunecastrum*. Where let vs leaue them in their false gallop, and returne to old *Fregoso*, who rising early in the morning, and missing his Daughter, asked for her through the whole house: but séeing none could discouer where she was, as assured of her escape, he cried out as a man halfe Lunaticke, that he was by *Francesco* robde of his onely iewell. Whereupon in a despayring furie he caused all his men and his tenants to mount them, and to disperse themselues euerie one with hue and crie for the recouerie of his daughter, he himself being horst, and riding the readie way to *Dunecastrum*. Where hee no sooner came, but

fortune meaning to dally with the old doteard, and to present him a boane to knaw on, brought it so to passe that as he was riding downe the towne, he met *Francesco* and his daughter comming from the Church, which although it piercte him to the quicke, and strainde euerie string of his heart to the higheft noate of sorrow, yet he concealed it till he tooke his Inne ; and then stumbling as fast as he could to the Mayors house of the towne, he reuealed vnto him the whole cause of his distresse, requiring his fauour for the clapping vp of this vnruely Gentleman, and to make the matter the more hainous, hee accused him of felonie, that he had not onely contrarie to the custome bereft him of his daughter against his wil, but with his daughter had taken away certaine plate. This euidence caused the Mayor straight garded with his Officers to march downe with *Fregoso* to the place where *Isabel* and her *Francesco* were at breakfast, little thinking poore soules such a sharp storme should follow so quiet a calme : but fortune would haue it so. And therefore as they were carrowing each to other in a swéete frolick of hoped for content, the Mayor rusht in, and apprehended him of felonie ; which draue the poore perplexed louers into such a dumpe, that they stood as the pictures that *Perseus* with his shield turnde into stones. *Francesco* presently with a sharpe infight entred

into the cause, / and perceiued it was the drift of the olde foxe his father in lawe: wherefore he tooke it with the more patience. But *Ifabel* seeing her new husband so handled, fell in a fwownd for sorrow which could not preuaile with the Serieants, but they conueyed him to prifon, and her to the Mayors house. As foone as this was done, *Fregoso* as a man carelesse what should become of them in a straunge Countrey, tooke horse and rode home, hee past melancholy, and these remained sorrowfull, especially *Ifabel*: who after shee had almost blubbred out her eyes for grieffe, fell at length into this passion.

Infortunate *Ifabel*, and therefore infortunate because thy sorrowes are more than thy yeares, and thy distresse too heauie for the prime of thy youth. Are the heauens so vniust, the starres so dismal, the planets so iniurious, that they haue more contrarie oppositions than fauourable aspects? that their influence doth infuse more preiudice than they cã inferre profite? Then no doubt if their motions be so maligne, *Saturne* conspiring with all his balefull signes, calculated the hower of thy birth full of disaaster accidents. Ah *Ifabel*, thou maist see the birds that are hatched in Winter are nipt with euerie storme; such as flie against the Sunne are either scorched or blinded; & those that repugne again nature, are euer croft

by fortune. Thy father foresaw these euills, and warned thee by experience ; thou reiectedst his counsaile, and therefore art bitten with repentance : such as looke not before they leape, ofte fall into the ditch ; and they that scorne their parents, cannot auoyd punishment. The yong Tygers followe the braying of their olde fire, the tender Fawnes choose their foode by the olde Bucke : These brute beafts and without reason stray not from the limits of nature ; thou a woman and endued with reason, are therefore thus sorrowfull, because thou hast been vnnaturall.

Whether now *Ifabel*? What, like the shrubbes of *India* parched with euerie storme? Wilt thou resemble the / brookes of *Caruia*, that drie vp with euerie Sunne-shine? Shall one blast of Fortune blemish all thy affection? one frown of thy father infringe thy loue toward thy husband? Wilt thou bee so inconstant at the first, that hast promised to bee loyall euer? If thou beest daunted on thy marriage day, thou wilt be fleeting hereafter. Didst thou not choose him for his vertues, and now wilt thou refuse him for his hard fortunes? Is hee not thy husband? yes : and therefore more deere to thee than is thy Father. I *Ifabel*, and vpon that resolute, least hauing so faithfull a *Troilus*, thou prooue as hatefull a *Cressyda* : sorrowe *Ifabel*, but not that thou hast followed *Francesco* : but

that *Francesco* by thée is fallen into such misfortunes: seeke to mitigate his maladies by thy patience, not to incense his griefe with thy passions: courage is knowne in extremities, womanhood in distresse: and as the *Chrisolite* is prooued in the fire, the diamond by the anuill; so loue is tried, not by the fauour of Fortune, but by the aduersitie of Time. Therefore *Isabel*, *Feras*, *non culpes, quòd vitari non potes*, and with *Tully* resolute thus:

*Puto rerum humanarum nihil esse firmum: Ita nec in prosperis lætitia gestes, nec in aduersis dolore concides.*

With this she held her peace and rested silent, so behauing her selfe in the Mayors house with such modestie and patience, that as they held her for a paragon of beautie, so they counted her for a spectacle of vertue: thinking her outward proportion was farre inferiour to her inward perfection: so that generally she wan the hearts of the whole house, in that they pitied her case, and wished her libertie. Infomuch that *Francesco* was the better vsed for hir sake: who being imprisoned, gréeued not at his owne sinister mishap, but sorowed for the fortune of *Isabel*, passing both day and night with manie extreame passions, to thinke on the distresse of his beloued paramour. Fortune who had wrought this tragedie, intending to shewe that her frunt is as full of fa/uours as of frownes; and that shee

holdes a dimple in her chéeke, as she hath a wrinkle in her brow, began thus in a Comickall vaine to bee pleafant. After manie daies were passed, and that the Mayor had entred into the good demenor of them both, noting that it proceeded rather of the displeasure of her father, than for anie special defart of felonie, séeing youth would haue his fwinge, and that as the mineralls of *Aetna* stooue fire, as the leaues in *Parthia* burnt with the Sunne ; so yong yeares are incident to the heate of loue, and affection will burft into such amorous parties. He, not as *Chremes* in *Terence*, meafuring the flames of youth by his dead cinders, but thinking of their present fortunes by the follies of his former age, called a Conuenticle of his Brethren, and séeing ther was none to giue any further euidence, thought to let *Francesco* lose. Hauing their frée consent, the next day taking *Isabel* with him, hée went to the Iayle, where they heard such rare reports of the behaiour of *Francesco*, that they forrowed not so much at his fortunes, as they wondred at his vertues : for the Iayler discourft vnto them, how as he was greatly passionate, so he vsed great patience ; hauing this vers oft in his mouth.

*Fortiter ille facit, qui miser esse potest.*

That he was affable and courteous, winning al, and offending none, that all his house as they



greeued at his imprisonment, would be forrie at his enlargement ; not for enuie of his person, but for forrowe of his absence. The Iaylour thus commending the Gentleman, conducted them to the chamber doore where *Francesco* lay, whom they found in secret meditation with himselfe : therefore they stayed, and were filent auditors to his passions. The first word they heard him breath out with a sigh was this,

*Soafrir me plaist, cur l'espoir me conforte.*

And with that taking a Citterne in his hand, faying this note.

*Pour paruenir l'endure :*

He warbled out this Ode. /

*Francescos Ode.*

*When I looke about the place  
Where sorrow nurseth vp disgrace,  
Wrapt within a folde of cares,  
Whose distresse no heart spares :  
Eyes might looke, but see no light,  
Heart might thinke but on despight,  
Sonne did shine, but not on me :  
Sorrow said it may not be,  
That heart or eye should once possesse  
Anie salue to cure distresse :  
For men in prison must suppose  
Their couches are the beds of woes.*

*Seeing this I fighed then,  
 Fortune thus should punish men.  
 But when I calde to minde her face  
 For whose loue I brooke this place:  
 Starrie eyes whereat my fight  
 Did eclipse with much delight:  
 Eyes that lighten and doo shine,  
 Beames of loue that are diuine,  
 Lilly cheekes whereon beside  
 Buds of roses shew their pride,  
 Cherrie lips which did speake  
 Words that made all hearts to breake:  
 Words most sweete, for breath was sweete,  
 Such perfume for loue is meete.  
 Precious words, as hard to tell  
 Which more pleased, wit or smell:  
 When I saw my greatest paines  
 Grow for hir that beautie staines.  
 Fortune thus I did reprove,  
 Nothing grieuefull growes from loue. |*

Hauing thus chanted ouer his Ode, he heard the chamber doore open; whereupon he grew melancholie, but when he saw the goddesse of his affection, on whose constant loyalty depended, the essence of his happines, he started vp as when loueficke *Mars* saw *Venus* entring his pauilion in triumph, entertaining them all generally with such

affabilitie, & her particularly with such courtesie, that he shewed himselfe as full of nurture as of nature. Interchange of intertainment thus past betwéene these two louers, as well with emphasis of words as extasie of mindes, concluding with streams of patheticall teares. The Mayor at last entred parlee, & told *Francesco*, though his father in law had alledged felony against him, yet because he perceiued that it rather procéded of some secret reuēge, than any manifest trueth, and that no further euidence came to censure the allegation, he was content to set him at libertie, conditionally, *Francesco* should giue his hand to be answerable to what hereafter in that behalfe might be obiected against him. These conditions accepted, *Francesco* was set at libertie, and he and *Isabell*, ioyntly together taking themselues to a little cottage, began to be as Eyceronicall as they were amorous; with their hands thrift coueting to satisfie their hearts thirst, and to be as diligent in labours, as they were affectionate in loues: so that the parish wherin they liued, so affected them for the course of their life, that they were counted the very myrrours of a Democraticall methode: for hee being a Scholler, and nurst vp in the Vniuersities, resolued rather to liue by his wit, than any way to be pinched with want, thinking this olde sentence to be true, *that wishers and woulders were neuer*

*good householders*, therefore he applied himselfe to teaching of a Schoole, where, by his industry he had, not onelie great fauour, but gote wealth to withstand fortune. *Ijabel*, that she might seeme no lesse profitable than her husband careful, fell to her needle, and with her worke sought to preuent the iniurie of necessitie. Thus they laboured to / maintaine their loues, being as busy as bees, and as true as Turtles, as desirous to satisfie the worlde with their desert, as to feede the humours of their owne desires. Liuing thus in a league of vnited vertues, out of this mutuall concorde of confirmed perfection, they had a sonne answerable to their owne proportion, which did increase their amitie, so as the sight of their young infant was a double ratifying of their affection. Fortune and Loue thus ioyning in league to make these parties to forget the stormes that had nipped the blossomes of their former yeers, addicted to the content of their loues this conclusion of blisse. After the tearme of fise yeares, *Seigneur Fregoso* hearing by fundry reports the fame of their forwardnesse, howe *Francesco* courted to be most louing to his daughter, and she most dutifull to him, and both striue to excéede one an other in loyalty, glad at this mutuall agrément, he fell from the furie of his former melancholie passions, and satisfied himselfe with a contented patience,

that at last he directed letters to his sonne in lawe, that he should make repayre to his house with his daughter. Which newes was no sooner come to the eares of this married couple; but providing for all things necessary for the furniture of their voyage, they posted as fast as they coude towards *Caer-branke*, where speedily arriuing at their fathers house they found such friendly intertainment at the olde mans hand, that they counted this smile of Fortune able to counteruaile all the contrarie stormes, that the aduerse planets had inflicted vpon them. Seated thus, as they thought, so surely, as no sinister chaunce, or dismall influence might remoue, she that is constant in nothing but inconstancie, beganne in faire skie to produce a tempest thus.

It so chanced that *Francesco* had necessarie businesse to dispatch certaine his vrgent affaires at the chief city of that Iland called *Troynouant*; thither with leaue of his father, and farewell to his wife, he departed after they / were married seuen yéeres: where after he was arriued, knowing that he should make his abode there, for the space of some nine weeks, he solde his horse and hired him a chamber, earnestlie endeauouring to make speedie dispatch of his affaires, that he might the sooner enjoy the sight of his desired *Isabel*: for did he see any woman beautiful, hee viewed her with a sigh,

thinking how farre his wife did furpasse her in excellence: were the modesty of any woman well noted by her qualities it gréeued him, hee was not at home with his *Isabel*, who did excell them all in vertues.

Thus hee construed all to her perfection, hauing no vacant time, neither day nor night wherein he did not ruminare on the perfection of his *Isabell*. As thus his thoughts were diuided on his businesse, and on his wife, looking one day out at his Chamber windowe hee espied a young Gentlewoman which looked out at a casement right opposite against his prospect, who fixed her eies vpon him with such cunning and artificiall glaunces, as she shewed in them a chaste disdaine, and yet a modest desire. Where (by the way Gentlemen) let me say this much, that our curtizans of *Troynouant* are far superiour in artificiall allurement to them of all the world, for although they haue not the painting of *Italie*, nor the charms of *France*, nor the iewelless of *Spaine*, yet they haue in their eyes adamants that wil drawe youth as the Iet the strawe, or the sight of the Panther the Ermly: their lookes are like lures that will reclaime, and like *Cyrces* apparitions, that can represent in them all motions: they containe modesty, mirth, chastity, wantonnes, and what not; and she that holdeth in her eie most ciuility, hath oft in hir heart most

dishonestie, being like the pyrit stone, that is, fire without and frost within. Such a one was this mery minion, whose honestie was as choise as *Venus* chastitie, being as faire as *Helena* and as faithlesse, as wel featured as *Cressida*, and as craftie; hauing an eie for euery passenger, a sigh for euerie loue, a smile for euery one that vailde his bonnet: and because shee loued the game well, a quiuer for euerie woodmans arrowe. This courtisan seeing this countrey *Francesco* was no other but a meere nouice, & that so newly, that to vse the old prouerb, he had scarce feene the lions. She thought to intrap him, and so arrest him with her amorous glances that shee would wring him by the purffe: wherevpon euery day she would out at hir casement stand, and there discouer her beauties. *Francesco*, who was like the Flie that delighted in the flame, and coueted to feed his eie on this beauteous Courtisan tilted at her with interchange of glaunces, and on a day to trie the finesse of his wit, with a poeticall fury, began thus to make a Canzone.

*Canzone.*

*As then the Sun sate lordly in his pride,  
Not shadowed with the vale of any cloude:  
The Welkin had no racke that seemd to glide,  
No duskie vapour did bright Phœbus shroude:*

*No blemish did eclipse the beauteous skie  
 From setting forth heauens secret searching eie.  
 No blustering winde did shake the shadie trees,  
 Each leafe lay still and silent in the wood,  
 The birds were muscally, the labouring Bees  
 That in the sommer heapes their winters good,  
 Plied to their hiues sweete hony from those flowers,  
 Whereout the serpent strengthens all his powers.  
 The lion laid and stretcht him in the lawnes,  
 No storme did hold the Leopard fro his pray,  
 The fallow fields were full of wanton fawnes,  
 The plough-swaines neuer saw a fairer day,  
 For euery beast and bird did take delight  
 To see the quiet heauens to shine so bright. |  
 When thus the windes lay sleeping in the caues,  
 The ayre was silent in her concaue sphere,  
 And Neptune with a calme did please his slaues,  
 Ready to wash the neuer drenched Beare :  
 Then did the change in my affects begin,  
 And wanton loue assaid to snare me in.  
 Leaning my backe against a loftie pine,  
 Whose top did checke the pride of all the aire,  
 Fixing my thoughts, and with my thoughts mine eie,  
 Vpon the sunne, the fairest of all faire :  
 What thing made God so faire as this, quoth I?  
 And thus I musde vntill I darkt mine eie.  
 Finding the sunne too glorious for my sight,  
 I glaunst my looke to shun so bright a lampe :*



With that appeare[d] an obiect twice as bright,  
 So gorgeous as my senses all were damp't.  
 In Ida richer beauties did not win  
 When louely Venus shewd her siluer skin.  
 Her pace was like to Iunoes pompous straines,  
 When as she sweeps through heuens brasse pauer way:  
 Hir front was powdred through with azurde vaines,  
 That twixt sweet Roses and faire Lillies lay;  
 Reflecting such a mixture from her face,  
 As tainted Venus beautie with disgrace.  
 Artophilex the brightest of the stars  
 Was not so orient as her christall eies:  
 Wherein triumphant sat both peace and wars,  
 From out whose arches such sweete fauours flies,  
 As might reclaime Mars in his highest rage,  
 At beauties charge his fury to assuage.  
 The diamond gleames not more reflecting lights  
 Painted with fiery pyramides to shine,  
 Than are those flames that burnish in our fights,  
 Darting fire out the christall of her eie,  
 Able to set Narcissus thoughts on fier  
 Although he swore him foe to sweete defier. |  
 Gasing vpon this lemman with mine eie,  
 I felt my sight vaile bonnet to her lookes:  
 So deepe a passion to my heart did flie,  
 As I was trapt within her luring lookes,  
 Forst to confesse before that I had done,  
 Her beauty farre more brighter than the Sunne.

*Francesco* hauing thus in a poeticall humour pleased his fancie, when his leifure serued him, woulde to make prooffe of his constancie interchange amorous glaunces with this faire curtisan, whose name was *Infida*, thinking his inward affections were so surely grounded on the vertues of an *Isabel*, that no exterior proportion could effect any passion to the contrary: but at last he found by experience, that the fairest blossomes, are soonest nipt with frost, the best fruite soonest touched with Caterpillers, and the ripest wittes most apt to be ouerthrowen by loue. *Infida* taught him with her lookes to learne this, that the eie of the Basiliske pierceth with preiudice; that the iuice of Celidonie is swéete, but it fretteth deadly; that *Cyrces* cuppes were too strong for all antidotes, and womens flatteries too forceable to resist at voluntarie: for shee so snared him in the fauours of her face, that his eie beganne to censure partially of her perfection, insomuch, that he thought her second to *Isabel*, if not superiour. Dallying thus wyth beautie as the flie in the flame: *Venus* willing to shewe how forceable her influence was, so tempred with opportunitie, that as *Francesco* walked abroad to take the ayre, he met with *Infida* gadding abroad with certaine hir companions, who like blazing starres shewed the markes of inconstant minions: for she no sooner drew neere *Francesco*, but dying her face with a Vermillion blush, and in

a wanton eie hiding a fained modesty, shee saluted him with a lowe courtesie. *Seigneur Francesco* that coulde well skill to court all kinde of degrees, leaft he might then be / thought to haue little manners, returned, not onely her courtesies with his bonnet, but taking *Infida* by the hand beganne thus. Faire mistresse, and if mine eie be not deceiued in so bright an object, mine ouerthwart neighbour : hauing often seene with delight, and coueted with desire to be acquainted with your sweete selfe ; I can not now but gratulate fortune with many thanks that hath offered such fit opportunitie to bring me to your prefence, hoping I shall finde you so friendly, as to craue that wee may be more familiar. She that knewe howe to entertaine such a young nouice, made him this cunning replie. Indeede sir, neighborhoode craues charitie, and such affable Gentlemen as your selfe deserues rather to be entertained with courtesie than reiected with disdaine. Therefore sir, what priuate friendship mine honour or honestie may affoord you aboue all (that hitherto I haue knowne) shall commaund. Then Mistres (quoth hee) for that euery man counts it credite to haue a patroneffe of his fortunes, and I am a meere straunger in this Citie: let mee finde such fauour, that all my actions may be shrowded vnder your excellence, and carrie the name of your seruant, ready for requitall of such gracious counte-

naunce to vnſheath my ſworde in the defence of my patronesse for euer. She that had her humour fitted with this motion, answered thus, with a looke that had bene able to haue forced *Troylus* to haue bene trothlesse to his *Cressida*: How kindly I take it *Seigneur Francesco*, for so I vnderstand your name, that you proffer your seruice to so meane a Mistresse, the effectuall fauours that shall to my poore abilitie gratifie your curtesie shall manifest how I accompt of such a friend. Therefore from henceforth *Infida* intertains *Francesco* for her seruant: & I (quoth he) accept of the beautiful *Infida* as my Mistresse. Vpon this they fell into other amorous prattle which I leaue off, and walked abroad while it was dinner time. *Francesco* still hauing / his eie vpon his new mistresse, whose beauties he thought, if they were equally tempered with vertues, to exceede all that yet his eie had made suruey of. Doating thus on this newe face with a new fancie, hee often wroong her by the hand, and brake off his sentences, with such deepe sighes, that she perceiued by the Weather-cocke where the winde blewe: returning such amorous passions, as she seemed as much intangled, as he was enamoured. Well, thinking now that she had bayted her hooke, shee would not cease while she had fully caught the fish, she beganne thus to lay the traine. When they were come neere to the

City gates, she stayed on a fodaine, & straying him hard by the hand, and glauncing a looke from her eies, as if she would both shew fauour, and craue affection, she began thus smilinglie to assault him.

Seruant, the Lawyers say the *assumpfit* is neuer good, where the partie giues not somewhat in consideration ; that seruice is voide, where it is not made fast by some fee. Least therefore your eie should make your minde variable as mens thoughts follow their fighs, and their lookes wauer at the excellence of new obiects, and so I loose such a seruant : to tie you to y<sup>e</sup> stake with an earnest, you shall this day be my guest at dinner. Then if heereafter you forget your mistresse, I shal appeale at the barre of Loyaltie, and so condemne you of lightnes. *Francesco* that was tied by the eies, & had his hart on his halfpenny, could not deny her, but with many thaks accepted of hir motion, so that agreed they went all to *Infidaes* house to dinner ; where they had such cheere as could vpon the fodaine be provided. *Infida* giuing him such friendly & familiar intertainement at his repast, aswel with swéet prattle as with amorous glances, that he rested captiue within the laborinth of hir flatteries. After dinner was done, that she might tie him from starting, she thought to set all her wits vpon *Ela*. Therefore she tooke a Lute in her

hand, and in an angelicall harmonie warbled out  
this conceited dittie. /

*Infidas song.*

Sweet *Adon'* darft not glaunce thine eye  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
 Vpon thy *Venus* that must die,  
*Je vous en prie, pitie me :*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy.*

See how fad thy *Venus* lies,  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
 Loue in heart and teares in eyes,  
*Je vous en prie, pitie me :*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy.*

Thy face as faire as *Paphos* brookes,  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
 Wherein fancie baites her hookes  
*Je vous en prie, pitie me.*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy.*

Thy cheekes like cherries that doo growe  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
 Amongst the *Westerne* mounts of fnowe,  
*Je vous en prie, pitie me :*

*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,  
N' oferes vous, mon bel amy.*

Thy lips vermilion, full of loue,  
    *N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
Thy necke as filuer, white as doue,  
    *Je vous en prie, pitie me :*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,  
N' oferes vous, mon bel amy. |*

Thine eyes like flames of holie fires,  
    *N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
Burnes all my thoughts with sweete desires,  
    *Je vous en prie, pitie me :*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,  
N' oferes vous, mon bel amy.*

All thy beauties sting my hart,  
    *N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
I must die through *Cupids* dart,  
    *Je vous en prie, pitie me :*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,  
N' oferes vous, mon bel amy.*

Wilt thou let thy *Venus* die,  
    *N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
*Adon* were vnkinde say I,  
    *Je vous en prie, pitie me :*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,  
N' oferes vous, mon bel amy.*

To let faire *Venus* die for woe,  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy,*  
 That doth loue fweete *Adon* fo,  
*Je vous en prie,* pitie me :  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel, mon bel,*  
*N' oferes vous, mon bel amy.*

While thus *Infida* fung her fong, *Francesco* fate, as if with *Orpheus* melodie he had been inchaunted, hauing his eyes fixed on her face, and his eares attendant on her Muficke, fo that he yeelded to that *Syren* which after forft him to a fatall fhipwrack : *Infida* laying away her lute after fell to other prattle. But becaufe it grew late in the afternoone, *Francesco* that was called away by his vrgent affairs, tooke his leaue: whereat *Infida* féemed verie melancholie, which / made our young fcholler half mad, yet with a folempne conge departing, he went about his bufines: whereas our cunning Curtizan, féeing her nouice gone, began to fmile, and faid to her companions, that fhée had made a good market that had caught fuch a tame foole. Alas poore yong Gentleman, (quoth fhe) he is like to the leaues in *Ægipt*, that as they fpring without raine, fo they burne at the fight of the fire : or to the fwallowes, that thinke euerie Sunne fhynne a Summers daye. Hee was neuer long wayter in *Venus* Court, that counts euerie fmile a fauour, and



euerie laugh to be true loue: but tis no matter, he hath store of pence, & I will fell him manie passions, vntill I leaue him as emptie of coyne, as my felfe is void of fancie. And thus leauing hir iesting at her new intertained seruant, againe to *Francesco*, who after he had made dispatch of his bufineffe, got him home to his lodging: where fitting solitarie in his chamber, he began to call to remembrance the perfections of his new Mistresse, the excellent proportion of her Phisnomie, her stature, voyce, gesture, vertues (as he thought) ruminating vpon euerie part with a plaudite. At last, as he was in this pleasing suppose, he remembered his fwéete *Isabel*, whose beautie and vertue was once so precious, that betwéen his old loue, and his new fancie, he fell into these passions. Ah *Francesco*, whether art thou caried with new conceits? shall thy fruites be more subiects to the Northern blasts, than thy blossomes? shal thy middle age be more ful of folly, than thy tender yeres? wilt thou loue in thy youth, and lust when thy dayes are halfe spent? Men say, that the Cedar, the elder it is, the straighter it growes; that *Narcissus* flowers the higher they spring, the more glorious is their hiew: and so shoulde Gentlemen as they excéede in yeres excell in vertues: but thou *Francesco* are like to the *Halciones*, which being hatcht white as milke, grow to be as blacke as

leate ; the yong ſtorke haue a muſical voyce, but the old a fearfull ſound. When thou wert of ſmall age, men honored thee for thy qualities, & now in yeares, ſhall / they hate thee for thy vices? But to what end tends this large preamble to checke thy fondneſſe, that muſt leaue to loue, and learne to luſt? What leaue to loue *Iſabel*, whoſe beautie is deuine, whoſe vertues rare, whoſe chaſtitie loyall, whoſe conſtancie vntainted? And for whom? for the loue of ſome vnknownen Curtizan. Conſider this *Franceſco*, *Iſabel* for thy fake hath left her parents, forſaken her friends, reiected the world, and was content rather to brook pouertie with thee, than poſſeſſe wealth with her father. Is ſhee not faire to content thine eye, vertuouſ to allure thy minde? nay, is ſhe not thy wife, to whom thou art bound by lawe, loue, and conſcience: and yet wilt thou ſtart from her? what frō *Iſabel*? Didſt thou not vowe that the heauens ſhould be without lampes, the earth without beaſts, the world without Elements, before *Iſabel* ſhould be forſaken of her *Franceſco*? And wilt thou proue as falſe as ſhe is faithfull? Shall ſhe like *Dido* crie out againſt *Aeneas*? like *Phyllis* againſt *Demophon*? like *Ariadne* againſt *Theſeus*? and thou be canonized in the Chronicles, for a man full of periurie. Oh conſider *Franceſco* whome thou ſhalt loſe if thou loſeſt *Iſabel*, and what thou ſhalt gaine, if thou winneſt *Infida*: the one

being a louing wife, the other a flattring Courtisan. Haft thou read *Aristotle*, and findest thou not in his Philosophie, this sentence fet downe.

*Omne animal irrationale ad sui similem diligendum natura dirigitur.*

And wilt thou that art a creature indued with reason as thou art, excelling them in wisedome, excéede them in vanities? Haft thou turned ouer the liberall sciences as a scholer, and amongst them all haft not found this general principle, that vnitie is the effence of amitie, and yet wilt thou make a diuision in the greatest simparchie of all loues? Nay *Francesco*, art thou a Christian, and haft tasted of the swéet fruites of Theologie, and haft not read this in holy writt, pend downe by that miracle of wisedome *Salomon*, that he which is wise should reiect the strange woman, and / regard not the swéetnesse of hir flatterie:

*Desire not the beautie of a strange woman in thy heart,  
nor be not intrapped in her eye liddes:*

*For through a whorish woman, a man is brought to a  
morsell of bread, and a woman will hunt for the  
precious life of a man.*

*Can a man take fire in his bosome, & not be burnt?*

*Or can a man tread vpon coales, and not be scorched?*

*So he that goeth to his neighbors wife, shall not be  
innocent, whofoeuer toucheth her.*

*Men do not despise a theefe when hee stealeth to satisfie*

*his soule : but if he be found he shall restore seven foldes or giue all the substaunce of his house.*

*But he that committeth adultrie with a woman, he is destitute of vnderstanding : he that dooth it, destroyeth his owne soule.*

*He shall finde a wounde and dishonour, and his reproach shall neuer be put away.*

If then *Francesco*, Theologie tells thee such axiomes, wilt thou striue against the streame? and with the déere féede against the winde? Wilt thou swallow vp sinne with gréedines, that thou maist be punished without repentance? No *Francesco*, home to the wife of thy youth, and drinke the pleasant waters of thine owne well. And what of all these friuolous circumstances? Wilt thou measure euerie action with philosophie, or euerie thought with Diuinitie? Then shalt thou liue in the world, as a man hated in the world. What *Francesco*, hee that is afraid of euerie bush, shal neuer proue good huntsman, and he that at euerie gust puts to the Lee shall neuer be good Nauigator. Thou art now *Francesco* to be a Louer, not a Diuine; to measure thy affections by *Ouids* principles, not by rules of Theologie: and time present wills thee to loue *Infida*, when thou canst not looke on *Isabel*: distance of place is a discharge of dutie, and men haue their faults, as they are ful of fancies. What, the blind eates manie a flie, and much runnes by the / mill

that the Miller neuer knowes of : the euill that the eye fees not the heart rues not, *Cautè si non caute* : Tush *Francesco*, *Ifabel* hath not *Lynceus* eyes, to fee so farre. Therefore while thou art resident in *Lōdon*, enioy the beautie of *Infida* : and when thou art at home onely content thée with *Ifabel* : so with a small fault shalt thou fully fatisfie thine own affection. Thus *Francesco* soothed himselfe, and did *In vtramuīs aurem dormire*, caring little for his good, as long as he might please his newe Goddesse ; and making no exception of a wife, so he might bee accepted of his paramour. To effect therefore the desired end of his affects, he made himselfe as neate and quaint as might be, and hied him to his newe Mistresse house, to put in practise that which himselfe had purposed ; whether in the afternoone ariuing, he vnderstood by her chamber maide that she was at home and solitarie : by her therefore hée was conducted to *Infidas* closet, wher he found her seeming melancholy, and thus awaked her from her dumpes.

Fair Mistres, haile to your person, quiet to your thoughts, and content to your desires. At my first comming into your chāber, seeing you fit so melancholy, I thought either *Diana* fate musing on the principles of her modestie, or *Venus* malecontent dumping upon her amours ; for the shewe of your vertues represents the one, & the excellence of

your beauties discouers the other : but at last when the glister of your beautie surpassing the both, reflected like the pride of *Phæbus* on my face, I perceiued it was my good Mistres, that discontented fate in her dumps ; wherefore as your bounden seruant, if either my word or sword may free you from these passions, I am here readie in all actions howsoever preiudiciall, to shew the effect of my affection. *Infida* glad to see her Louer in this Laborinth ; wherein to binde him sure, she taking him by the hand, made this wylie aunswere.

Swéete seruant, how discontent soeuer I seeme, dismay not you ; for your welcome is such as you can wish, or /the sinceritie of my heart afford : womens dumps growe not euer of a preiudicial mishap, but oftimes of some superficiall melancholy, inforced with a frowne, and shaken off with a smile ; hauing sorrow in their faces, and pleasure in their heart ; resembling the leaues of the liquorice, that when they are most full of dew without, are then most dry within. I tell you seruant, women are wily cattle, & therefore haue I chosen so good a heardsman as your selfe, that what our wantonnes offends, your wisedome may amend. But trust me *Francesco*, were I wronged by Fortune, or iniured by anie foe, the promise of such a Champion were sufficient to arme me with disdain against both : but rest satisfied, your

presence hath banished all passions : and therefore you may see seruant, you are the Loadstone, by whose vertue my thoughts take all their direction. Being thus pleasant, she fate *Francesco* downe by her, & hand in hand interchanged amorous glaunces. But he that was abasht to discover his minde, in that some sparkes of honestie still remained in his heart, fate tormented with loue and feare, prickt forward by the one to discourse his desires, kept backe by the other from vttring his affections. Thus in a quandarie, he fate like one of *Medusaes* changlings, till *Infida* seeing him in this sodaine amaze, began thus to shake him out of his passions.

Now *Signor Francesco*, I see the olde adage is not alwayes true, *Consulenti nunquam caput doluit* : for you that earst alledged perswasions of mirth, are now ouergrownen with melancholy. When a extreame Storme followes a pleasant calme, then the effectes are Metaphusicall, and where such a violent dumpe of cares is sequence to such an extasie of ioyes, either I must attribute it to some apoplexy of senses, or some strange alterations of passions. *Francesco* the ouen damp vt hath the greatest heate, fire suppressed is most forceable, the streames stopt, either break through or ouerflow ; and sorrowes concealed as they are most passionate, so they are most peremptorie. /

What *Francesco*? spit on thy hand, and lay holde on thy hart, one pound of care payes not an ounce of debt, a friend to reueale is a medicine to reléue: discouer thy grieffe, and if I be not able to redresse with wealth, although what I haue, is at thy commaund, yet I will attempt with counsaile, either to perswade thee from passions, or intreat thee to patience: say *Francesco* and feare not, for as I will be a friendly counseller, so I will be a faithfull concealer. Our young Gentleman hearing *Infida* apply such lenatiue plaisters to his cutting corasives, thought the patient had great hope when the phisition was so friendly: he therefore with a demure countenance beginning loue like his preamble with a deepe sigh, courted her thus.

Faire Mistresse (quoth hee) if I faile in my speaches; thinke it is, because I faint in my passions, being as timorous to offend as I am amorous to attempt: when the obiekt is offered to the sense, the sight is hindred, *Sensibile sensui oppositum, nulla fit sensatio*: *Mars* could neuer play the Orator when he wroong *Venus* by the hands: nor *Tullie* tell his tale when his thoughts were in *Terentiaes* eyes: Louers are like to the Heban blossomes that open with the deawe, and shut with the sunne: so they in presence of their Mistresse haue their tongues tied, and their eies open, plead-



ing with the one, and being silent in the other, which one describeth thus.

*Alter in alterius iactantes lumina vultus,  
Quærebant taciti noſter ubi eſſet amor.*

Therefore ſwéete *Infida*, what my tongue vtters not, thinke conceited in my hart, and then thus: ſince firſt my good fortune, if thou fauoureſt me, or my aduerſe deſtinies, if I finde the contrary, brought me to *Troynouant*, and that theſe ouer daring eies were intertained into thoſe gorgeous obieſts, knowe that *Cupid* lying at aduantage ſo ſnared mee in thy perfeſtions, that euer ſince euery ſenſe / hath reſted imperfèct. For when I marked thy face, more beauteous than *Venus*, I ſurueid it with a ſigh, and mine eie purtrayed it with a paſſion, when I noted thy vertues, then my mind reſted captiue, when I heard thy wit, I did not onely wonder, but I was ſo wrapt in the laborinth of thine excellèce, that no ſtarre but *Infida* could be the guide whereby to direct my courſe. Sith then, faire Miſtreſſe, you, and none but you, haue robd me of mine affeſtions, harbour not in ſuch a ſweete body a hard heart, but doe mee iuſtice, let me haue loue for loue, leaſt I complaine my deſtinies not to be equiualent to my deſires, and thinke my fortunes to be ſharper than my loues. Thinke *Infida* falts in affeſtions, are but ſleight follies ; *Venus* hath ſhrines to ſhadow her trewants,

and *Cupids* wings are shelters for such as venter farre to content their thoughts. Sins vnſeene are halfe pardoned ; and Loue requires not chaſtitie, but that her ſouldiours be charie. Then thinke (ſwéete *Infida*) if thou graunt my deſire, how carefull I will be of thy honour, rather readie to abide the preiudice of life, than to brooke the diſparagement of thy fame : In lieu therefore of my loyall ſeruice, grant me that ſwéete gift, which as it begins in amitie, can no way take ende but in death : otherwiſe I ſhall be forced to accuſe my fortunes, accuſe thy frowardneſſe, and expect no other hap, but a life full of miſeries, or a death full of martyrdom. With this paſſion ending his plea, he diſſolued into ſuch fighes, that it diſcouered his inward affection not to be leſſe than his outward proteſtation. *Infida* noting the perplexitie of her Louer, conceited his grieſe with great ioy, yet that ſhe might not be thought to forward, ſhe ſeemed thus froward ; and although her thoughts were more than his deſires, and that her mind was no leſſe than his motion, yet pulling her hand from his, ſhe made this frowning replie.

What *Franceſco*, when the Tygre hunteth for his pray, doth he then hide his clawes ? Is the pyrit ſtone then moſt hote, when it looketh moſt colde ? Are men ſo ſubtile / that when they ſeem moſt holy, they are fartheſt from god ? can they

vnder the shadow of vertue couer the substance of vanitie, & like *Ianus* be double faced, to present both faith & flattery. I had thought (seruant) whē I entertained thee for thy courtesie, I should not haue had occasion to shake thee off for thy boldnes: nor when I likte thee for thy affable simplicitie, I should haue misliked thee for thy secret subtilty: What *Francesco*, to desire such a grant as may, if thou wert wise, neither stand with thy honesty to intēd, nor with my honor to effect. Tel me *Francesco*, hath either my couēnaunce bin so ouercurteous, that it might promise such small curiosity, or my looks so lasciuious that thou mightest hope to find me so lauish, or my actions so wauering, or my disposition so ful of vanitie that my honor might seeme soone to be assaulted, & soon sacked? If I haue (*Francesco*) bin faulty in these follies, then wil I seek to amend wherin thou saiest I haue made offence; if not, but that thou thinkest, for that I am a woman, I am easie to be wonne, with promises of loue and protestations of loyaltie, thou arte (sweet seruant) in a wrong box, and fittest far beside the cushion; for I passe of my honor more than life, & couet rather to haue the title of honestie, than the dignitie of a diademe: cease then, vnlesse thou wilt surcease to haue my fauor, and content thee with this, that *Infida* allowes of thee for loue, not for lust: & yet if she

should treade her shoo awrie, would rather yeeld the spoile of her honor to her feruant, than to the greatest prince of the world. *Francesco*, though he was a nouice in these affaires, and was nipped on the head with this sharp repulse, yet he was not so to take the showre for the first storme, nor so ill a woodman to giue ouer the chace at y first default, but that he profecuted his purpose thus. I am fory (faire goddesse of my deuotion) if my presumption hath giuē any offence to my sweet mistresse, for rather than I should but procure a frown in hir forehead, I would haue a déep wound in my own hart: coueting rather to suppres my passions with death, than to disparage my credite / with so good a patronesse. Therefore although my destinies be extreame, my affection great, and my loues such as can take no end, but in your faouours, yet I rest vpon this, *Infida* hath commanded me to cease, and I will not dare so much as to profecute my sute, although euerie passion should be a purgatorie, and euerie dayes deniall a moneths punishment in hell: with that he set downe his period with such a sigh, that as the Marriners say, a man would haue thought all would haue split againe. This cunning Curtizan beeing afraid, with this checke to haue quatted the queazie stomacke of her louer, desirous to draw to her that with both hands, which she had thrust

away with her little finger, began to be pleafant with *Francesco* thus.

What feruant, are you fuch a fresh water fouldier, that you faint at the firft skirmish? feare not man, you haue not to deale with *Mars*, but with *Venus*: and her darts of deniall as they pricke sharpe, fo they pierce little, and her thūderbolts doo afright not preiudice. Feare not man, a womans heart and her tongue are not relatuiues; tis not euer true, that what the heart thinketh the tongue clacketh. *Venus* stormes are tempred with Rose water, and when shee hath the greateft wrinkle in her browe, then shee hath the sweeteft dimple in her chin: be blithe man, a faint heart neuer wonne faire Ladie. *Francesco* hearing his Miftrefse thus pleafant, tooke opportunitie by the forehead, and dealt fo with his *Infida*, that before hee went all was well: shee blusht not, nor hee basht, but both made vp their market with a faire of kifses: which fympathie of affections, bred the poore Gentlemans ouerthrow; for he was fo fnared in the wily tramels of her alluring flatterie, that neither the remembrance of his *Ifabel*, the care of his childe, the fauor of his friendes, or the feare of his discredit, coulde in anie wife hale him from that hell, whereinto through his owne follie, he was fallen.

Where, by the way (Gentlemen) let vs note the

subtiltie of these *Syrens*, that with their false harmonie per/swade, and then prejudice; who bewitch like *Calipso*, and inchaunt like *Circe*, carying a shewe as if they were Vestalls, and could with *Amulia* carry water in a sieve, when they are flat Curtizans, as farre from honestie, as they are from deuotion. At the first, they carrie a faire shew, resembling *Calisto*, who hid hir vanities w̄ *Dianas* vail, hauing in their lookes a coy disdaine, but in their hearts a hote desire, denying with the tongue, and enticing wyth their lookes, reiecting in wordes, and alluring in gestures: and such a one (gentlemen) was *Infida*, who so plied *Francesco* with her flattering fawnes, that as the yron follows the adamant, the straw the Iet, and the Helitropion the beames of the sunne, so his actions were directed after her eie, and what she saide stode for a principle, infomuch, that he was not onely readie in all submisſe humours to please her fancies, but willing for the least worde of offence, to draw his weapon against the stoutest champion in al *Troy-nouant*. Thus seated in her beauty hee liued a long while, forgetting his returne to *Caerbrancke*, till on a day sitting musing with himselfe, he fell into a deepe consideration of his former fortunes and present follies: whereupon taking his Lute in his hand he soong this Roundley.

*Francescoes Roundeley.*

*Sitting and sighing in my secret muse,  
 As once Apollo did surprisde with loue,  
 Noting the slipperly wayes young yeeres do vse  
 What fond affects the prime of youth doth moue,  
 With bitter teares despairing I do crie,  
 Wo worth the faults and follies of mine eie.*

*When wanton age the blossoms of my time  
 Drewe me to gaze vpon the gorgeous sight  
 That beauty pompous in her highest prime,  
 Presents to tangle men with sweete delight, |  
 Then with despairing teares my thoughts do crie,  
 Wo worth the faults and follies of mine eie.*

*When I surueid the riches of her lookes,  
 Whereout flew flames of neuer quencht desire,  
 Wherein lay baites, that Venus snares with hookes,  
 Oh where proud Cupid sate all armde with fire:  
 Then toucht with loue my inward soule did crie,  
 Wo worth the faultes and follies of mine eie.*

*The milke-white Galaxia of her brow,  
 Where loue doth daunce la voltas of his skill.  
 Like to the Temple where true louers vow  
 To follow what shall please their Mistresse will,  
 Noting her iuorie front, now do I crie,  
 Wo worth the faults and follies of mine eie.*

*Hir face like filuer Luna in hir shine,  
 All tainted through with bright Vermillion staines,  
 Like lillies dipt in Bacchus choicest wine,  
 Powdred and interseamd with azurde vaines,  
 Delighting in their pride now may I crie,  
 Wo worth the faults and follies of mine eie.*

*The golden wyers that checkers in the day,  
 Inferiour to the tresses of her haire,  
 Hir amber tramells did my heart dismay,  
 That when I lookte I durst not ouer dare :  
 Proud of her pride now am I forst to crie,  
 Wo worth the faults and follies of mine eie. |*

*These fading beauties drew me on to sin  
 Natures great riches framde my bitter ruth,  
 These were the trappes that loue did snare me in,  
 Oh, these, and none but these haue wrackt my youth,  
 Mised by them I may dispairing crie,  
 Wo worth the faults and follies of mine eie.*

*By these I slipt from vertues holy tracke,  
 That leades vnto the highest christall sphere,  
 By these I fell to vanitie and wracke,  
 And as a man forlorne with sin and feare,  
 Despaire and sorrow doth constraime me crie,  
 Wo worth the faults and follies of mine eie.*

Although this Sonnet was of his ready inuention,  
 and that he vttered it in bitterneffe of minde, yet



after he had past ouer his melancholy, and from his solitarie was fallen into companie, he forgate this patheticall impressiion of vertue, and like the dogge did *redire ad vomitum*, and fell to his owne vomite, refembling those Gretians, that with *Vlysses* drinking of *Cyrces* drugges, lost both forme and memorie : Wel his affaires were done, his horse folde, and no other businesse now rested to hinder him from hying home, but his Mistresse, which was such a violent deteyner of his person and thoughts, that there is no heauen but *Infidaes* house : where, although hee pleasantly entred in with delight, yet cowardly he slipt away with repentance. Well, leauing him to his new loues, at last to *Isabell*, who daily expected the comming home of her best beloued *Francesco*, thinking euery houre a yeare, till she might see him, in whome rested all her content. But when (poore soule) shee coulde neither feede her sight with his presence, nor her eares with his letters, she beganne to lower and grew so discontent, that shee fell into a feuer. /

Fortune that meant to trie hir patience thought to prooue her with these tragicall newes : It was tolde her by certaine Gentlemen her friends, who were her husbands priuate familiars, that he meant to soiorne most part of the yeere in *Troynouant* : one blunt fellowe amongest the rest that was playne and wythout falshoode, tolde her the whole cause of

his residence, howe hee was in loue wyth a most beautifull Gentlewoman called *Infida*, and that so deeply, that no perfwasion might reuoke him from that alluring curtizan. At this *Ifabell* made no accompt, but tooke it as a friuolous tale, and thought the woorfe of such as buzzed such fantastical follies in her eares, but when the generall report of his misdemeanours were bruted abroad throughout *Caerbrancke*, then with blushing chéeke she hid hir head, & greeuing at his follies, and her owne fortunes, smothered the flames of her sorrows with inward conceit, but outwardly withstood such in fatyricall tearmes as did inueigh against the honestie of *Francesco* so that she wonne great commendations of all for her loyaltie and constancie yet when she was gotten secret by hir selfe, her heart full of sorrowfull passions, and her eies full of teares, she beganne to meditate with her selfe of the prime of her youth vowed to *Francesco*: how she forfooke father, friendes, and Countrey to bee paramour vnto her hearts paragon. The vowes hee made, when he carried her away in the night, the solempne promises and protestations that were vttered. When shee had pondred all these things, then she called to minde *Aeneas*, *Demophon* and *Theseus*, and matcht them with *Dido*, *Phyllis* and *Ariadne*, and at last sighd thus: And shal it be so betwéene *Ifabel* and *Francesco*? No, thinke not so

(fond woman) let not ieloufie blinde thee, whome loue hath indued with fuch a piercing infight : for as there is no content to the fwéeteneffe of loue, fo there is no despaire to the preiudice of Ieloufie : whereupon to fhake off all fancies, ſhe tooke / her Cittern in her hand, and foong this verſe out of *Ariſto*.

Che piu felice é pui iocondo ftato,  
 Che viuer piu dolce é piu beato  
 Sarui diferuire vno amorofo cuore,  
 Che d' effer in feruitu d' amore,  
 Se non fuſſe huomo ſempre ftimolato,  
 Da quella rio timore, da quella frenezia,  
 Da quella rabbia, della ielozia.

Yet as women are conſtant, ſo they are eaſie to beléue, eſpecially trueth, and ſo it fell out with *Iſabell*, for ſhée (poore ſoule) could take no reſt, ſo was her head troubled with theſe newes, hammering a thouſand humours in her braine how ſhe might know the certaintie of his follies, and how ſhe might reclaime him from his newe intertained affection. She conſidered with her ſelf, that men allure Doues by the beauty of the houſe, and reclaime hawkes by the fairneſſe of the lure, and that loue ioyned with vertue, were able to recall the moſt ſtragling *Aeneas* to make ſayles againe to *Carthage*. Tuſh quoth ſhe to her ſelfe, ſuppoſe he

be false in Loue with a curtizan, and that beautie hath giuen him the braue: what shall I vtterly condemne him? No, as he was not the first, so he shall not be the last: what, youth will haue his swindge, the briar will bee full of prickles, the nettle will haue his sting, and youth his amours: men must loue and will loue, though it be both against law and reason; a crooked sien will proue a straight trée, the Iuniper is sower when it is a twigge, and sweete when it is a trée; time changeth manners, and *Francesco* when hee entred into the conditions of a flattering Curtizan, will forsake her, and returne penitent and more louing to his *Isa / bel*. Thus like a good wife she construed all to the best, yet she thought to put him in minde of his returne, and therefore she writ him a letter to this effect.

### Isabel to Francesco

*health.*

**I**F *Penelope* longde for her *Vlysses*, thinke *Isabel* wisheth for her *Francesco*, as loyall to thee as she was constant to the wily *Greeke*, and no lesse desirous to see thee in *Caerbranck*, than she to enioy his presence in *Ithaca*, watering my chéekes with as manie teares, as she her face with plaints, yet my *Francesco*, hoping I haue no such cause as she to increase her cares: for

I haue such resolution in thy constancie, that no *Circes* with all her inchantments, no *Calipso* with all her sorceries, no *Syren* with all their melodies could peruert thee from thinking on thine *Ifabel*: I know *Francesco* so deeply hath the faithful promise and loyall vowes made & interchanged betwéene vs taken place in thy thoughtes, that no time how long foeuer, no distance of place howfoeuer different, may alter that impressiõ. But why doo I inferre this needlesse insinuation to him, that no vanitie can alienate from vertue: let me *Francesco* perswade thee with other circumstances. First my Swéete, thinke how thine *Ifabel* lies alone, measuring the time with sighes, & thine absence with passions; counting the day dismall, and the night full of sorrowes; being euerie way discontent, because shee is not content with her *Francesco*. The onely / comfort that I haue in thine absence is thy child, who lies on his mothers knee, and smiles as wātōly as his father when he was a wooer. But when the boy sayes: Mam, where is my dad, when will hée come home? Then the calme of my content turneth to a present storme of piercing sorrowe, that I am forced sometime to say: Vnkinde *Francesco*, that forgets his *Ifabell*. I hope *Francesco* it is thine affaires, not my faults that procureth this long delay. For if I knewe my follies did any way offend thee, to rest thus long absent, I woulde

punish my selfe both with outward and inward penance. But howsoever, I pray for thy health, and thy speedie returne, and so *Francesco* farewell.

*Thine more than her owne*

*Isabel.*

She hauing finished her letters, conueied them speedelie to *Troynouant*, where they were deliuered to *Francesco*: who receiuing them with a blush, went into his study, and there vnripte the feales with a sigh, perceiuing by the contents that *Isabell* had an inckling of his vnkinde loues, which driue him into a great quandarie, that déepely entring into the insight of his lasciuious life, hee beganne to feele a remorse in his conscience, howe grieuoufly hee hath offended hir, that had so faithfullie loued him. Oh, quoth hee, shall I be so ingrate as to quittance affection with fraud? So vnkinde as to weigh downe loue with discourtesie, to giue her a wéede that presents me a flower, and to beate her with nettles that perfumes me w̄ roses: consider with thy selfe *Francesco*, / how deeply thou doost sinne: First, thou offendest thy God in choosing so wanton a goddesse; then, thou doost wrong thy wife, in preferring an incōstant curtizan before so faithfull a paramour: yet *Francesco*, thy haruest is in the grasse, thou maiest stoppe at the brimme, because thou hast neuer touched the

bottom. What? men may fall, but to wallowe in wickednesse is a double fault. Therefore recall thy selfe, reclayme thy affections: Is not thine *Isabell* as faire? Oh, if shee be not, yet shee is more vertuous. Is not *Isabell* so wittie as *Infida*? Oh but shee is more constant, and then art thou so madde, to preferre drosse before Golde, a common Flint before a choice Diamond, vice before vertue, fading beautie before the excellence of inward qualities: No, shake off these follies, and say, both in mouth & in hart; None like *Isabell*. This he saide by himselfe, but when he went forth of his Chamber, and spied but his Mistresse looking out of her windowe, all this geare chaungde, and the case was altered: shee calde, and in hee must, and there in a iest scofft at his Wiues Letters, taking his *Infida* in his armes, and saying, I will not leaue this *Troy* for the chafteft *Penelope* in the world.

Thus hee soothed himselfe in the sweetnesse of his sinne, resembling the Leopardesthat féece on Marioran while they die, or the People *Hyperborei*, that sit so long and gaze against the Sunne till they become blinde; so hee doated on the perfection of *Infida*, till it grewe to his vtter preiudice: for no reason coulde diuert him from his damned intent, so had he drowned himselfe in the dregges of lust: infomuch that hee counted it no sinne to offend

with fo faire a Saint: alluding to the faying of the holy Father.

*Consuetudo peccandi, tollit sensum peccati. /*

Thus did these two continue in the Simpathie of their finnes, while poore *Isabel* rested her at home content in this, that at last he would bee reclaimed, and till then shee wold vse patience, seeing *Nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via*. Wallowing thus in the foldes of their owne follies, Fortune that meant to experience the force of Loue, dealt thus conceiptedly; After these two Louers had by the space of threé yeares securely slumbred in the swéetnesse of their pleasures, and drunke with the surfet of Content, thought no other heauen, but their owne supposed happinesse; as euerie storme hath his calme, and the greatest Spring-tide the deadeft ebbe, so fared it with *Francesco*: for so long went the pot to the water, that at last it came broken home; and so long put he his hand into his purse, that at last the emptie bottome returned him a Writt of *Non est inuentus*; for well might the Divell dance there, for euer a crosse to keepe him backe.

Well, this Louer fuller of passions than of peace, began (when hee entred into the consideration of his owne estate) to mourne of the chyne, and to hang the lippe as one that for want of founding had stroke himselfe vpon the Sands; yet he



couered his inward forrowe with outward smiles, and like *Ianus* presented his Mistresse with a merrie looke, when the other side of his visage was full of forrowes. But she that was as good as a touchstone to trye mettalls, could straight spie by the laste where the shooe wringde him: and seeing her *Francesco* was almost foundred, thought to see if a skilfull Farrier might mend him; if not, like an vnthankfull Hackney-man shee meant to tourne him into the bare leas, and fet him as a tyrde iade to picke a fallet.

Vppon which determination, that shee might doo nothing rashly, shee made enquirie into his estate, what Liuings he had, what Landes to sell, howe they were eyther tyed by Statute, or Intailde? At last, thorough her secret / and subtill inquisition, she found that all his corne was on the floore, that his sheepe were clipt, and the Wooll folde; to be short, that what he had by his Wife coulde neither be folde nor morgaged, and what he had of his owne was spent vppon her, that nothing was lefte for him to liue vppon but his wits. This newes was such a cooling Card to this Curtizan, that the extreame heate of her loue was alreadie growen to bee luke warme: which *Francesco* might easely perceiue; for at his arriual, his welcome was more straunge, her lookes more coy, his fare more slender, her glaunces lesse amorous: and shee

féemed to bee *Infida* in proportion, but not in wonted paffions.

This vncouth difdaine made *Francesco* maruell, who yet had not entred into her deceiptes, nor (beeing fimple of himfelfe) had euer yet experient a ftrumpets fubtiltie; he imputed therefore his Miftreffes coyneffe to the diftemperature of her bodie, and thought that being not well, it was no wonder though fhee gaue him the leffe welcome.

Thus poore nouice did he confter euerie thing to the beft, vntill Time prefented him with the truth of the worft: for in fhort time, his hofteffe calde for money, his creditors threatened him with an arreft, his cloathes waxt thredbare, and there was no more coyne in the Mynte to amende them. Whereupon on a day, fitting in a great dumpe by his *Infida*, who was as folempne as he was forrowfull, hee burft foorth into thefe fpeeches.

I haue read fwéete Loue in the Aphorifmes of Philofophers, that heate fuppreffed is more violent, the ftream ftopt makes the greater Deluge, and paffions concealed, procure the déeper forrowes. Then if *Contrariorum Contraria eft ratio*, there is nothing better than a bofome friend with whome to conferre vpon the / iniurie of fortune. Finding my felfe (my *Infida*) full of *Pathemas* as ftung to the quicke, inuenymed with the *Tarantula* of heart ficke torments, I thinke no medicine fitter

for my maladie, than to be cured by the muscally harmonie of thy friendly counsaile. Knowe then *Infida* that *Troynouant* is a place of great expence, like the Serpent *Hidaspis*, that the more it suckes, the more it is a thirst, eating men aliue as the Crocodile, and being a place of as daungerous allurements, as the feate where the *Syrens* sit and chaunt their preiudiciall melodie. It is to young Gentlemen, like the Laborynth, whereout *Theseus* could not get without a threed, but here be such monstrous Minotaures as first deuour the threed, and then the person. The Innes are like hote-houfes, which by little and little sweate a man into a consumption; the hoste he carries a pint of wine in the one hande to welcome, but a poniard in the other to stab; and the hostesse she hath smiles in her forehead, and prouides good meate for her guefts, but the fauce is costly, for it far exceeds the cates. If coyne want, then either to *Limbo*, or els clap vp a commoditie (if so much credite be left) where he shall finde such knots, as he will neuer be able without his vtter preiudice to vntie. Brokers, I leaue them of, as too course ware to be mouthde with an honest mans tongue. These Minotaures faire *Infida*, haue so eaten mee vp in this Laborinth, as to bee plaine with thee that art my second selfe, I want, and am so farre indebted to the Mercer and mine Hostesse, as either thou

muſt ſtand my friend to diſburſe ſo much money for me, or els I muſt depart from *Troynouant*, and ſo from thy fight, which how precious it is to mee, I referre to thine owne conſcience; or for an *Vltimum vale* take vp my lodging in the counter, which I know, as it would be vncouth to me, ſo it would be gréeuefull to thee; and therefore now hangs my welfare in thy wil. /

How loth I was to vtter vnto thee my want and forrowe, meaſure by my loue; who wiſh rather death than thy diſcontent.

*Infida* could ſcarce ſuffer him in ſo long a Periode, and therefore with her forehead full of furrowes, ſhee made him this anſwere. And would you haue me (ſir) buy an ounce of pleaſure with a tunne of miſhappes, or reach after repentaunce with ſo hie a rate: haue I lent thee the bloſſoms of my youth, and delighted thee with the prime of my yeares? haſt thou had the ſpoile of my virginie, and now wouldeſt thou haue the ſacke of my ſubſtaunce? when thou haſt withered my perſon, aymeſt thou at my wealth? No ſir, no; knowe, that for the loue of thee, I haue crackt my credite, that neuer before was ſtained. I cannot looke abroad without a bluſh, nor go with my neighbours without a frump, thou, and thy name is euer caſt in my diſh, my foes laugh, and my friends iorrow to ſee my follies: wherefore ſeeing

thou beginnest to picke a quarrell, and hereafter, when thine owne base fortunes haue brought thee to beggarie wilt say, that *Infida* cost thee so many Crownes, and was thine ouerthrowe : au aunt nouice, home to thine owne wife, who (poore Gentlewoman) fits and wants what thou consumeest at Tauerns. Thou hast had my despoyle, and I feare I beare in my bellie the token of too much loue I ought thee. Yet content with this discredite, rather than to runne into further extremitie : get thee out of my doores, for from henceforth thou shalt neuer be welcome to *Infida*. And with that shee flung vp, and went into her Chamber: *Francesco* would haue made a replie, but shee woulde not heare him, nor holde him any more chat : Whereupon with a flea in his eare, hee went to his lodging. There ruminating on the number of his follies, and the hardnesse of his fortunes, seeing his skore great, / his coyne little, his credite lesse : weighing how hardly he had vsed his *Isabell* : at last leaning his head on his hand, with teares in his eies, he beganne to be thus extremely passionate. Nowe *Francesco piscator iētus sapit*, experience is a true mistresse, but shee maketh her Schollers treade vpon Thornes : hast thou not leaped into the ditch, which thou hast long foreséene, and bought that with repentance which thou hast so gréedily desired to reape. Oh now thou

feest the difference betweene loue and lust: the one ful of contented pleasure, the other of pleasing miseries: thy thoughts were feathered with fancie, and whether did they flie so farre that they fréeed themselues, and thou rest consumed? Oh *Francesco*, what are women? If they bee honest Saints, the puritie of nature, the excellence of vertue, the perfection of earthly content. But if they bee curtifans and strumpets. Oh let me breath before I can vtter the depth of such a monstrous description. They be in shape Angels, but in quallities Deuilles, painted Sepulchres with rotten bones, their foreheads are Kalenders of misfortunes, their eies like comets, that when they sparkle foretell some fatall disparagement, they allure with amourous glaunces of lust, and kill with bitter looks of hate, they haue dimples in their cheekes to deceiue, and wrinckles in their browes to betray, their lippes are like honie combes, but who tasteth the droppes is impoisoned; they are as cleare as Christall, but bruse them, and they are as infectious as the Diamond, their teares are like the Aconiton, that the Hidra wept; they present as *Deianiea* shirts for presents, but who puts them on, consumes like *Hercules*, they lay out the foldes of their haire, and intangle men in their tresses, playing the horse-leach, that sucketh while they burst; betweene their breasts is the vale of

destruction, and in their beds oh there is sorrow, /  
 repentance, hell & despayre. They consume man  
 aliue, and ayme at his substance not his perfection :  
 like eagles, that onely flie thither where the carrion  
 is, they leade man to hell, and leaue him at the  
 gates. To be briefe, they are ingrateful, periured,  
 vntrue, inconstant, fléeting, full of fraud, deceitfull,  
 and to conclude in one worde, they be the very  
 refuse of natures excrements. Oh *Francesco*, what  
 a Satyricall inuectiue hast thou vttered? I may  
 best, quoth hee, for I haue bought euery principle  
 with a pound: What now rests for thee poor  
 infortunate man? Thou hast yet left a meanes to  
 ende all these miseries, and that is this, Drawe thy  
 rapier and so die, that with a manly resolution thou  
 mayest preuent thy further misfortunes. Oh  
 although thou hast sinned, yet despaire not, though  
 thou art Anathema, yet proue not an Atheist: the  
 mercie of God is aboue all his workes, and repent-  
 aunce is a pretious balme. Home to thy wife, to  
 the wife of thy youth *Francesco*, to *Isabell*; who  
 with her patience will couer all thy follies: remem-  
 ber this man, *Nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via*.

Thus hee ended, and with verie griefe fell in a  
 slumber. At this the Palmer breathed, and made  
 a stop and a long periode. His hoste desirous to  
 heare out the end of *Francescoes* fortunes, wished  
 him to goe forwarde in his discourse. Pardon mee

Sir, quoth the Palmer, the night is late, and I haue trauelled all the day; my bellie is full, and my bones would be at rest. Therefore for this time, let thus much suffice, and to morrowe at our vprising, which shall be with the Sunne, I will not onlie discourse vnto you the ende of *Francescoes* amours, of his returne home to his wife, and his repentaunce, but manifest vnto you the reason whie I aymed my pilgrimage to *Venice*.

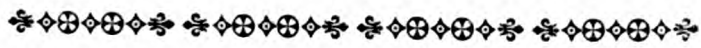
The Gentleman and his Wife verie loath to bee tedious to the good Palmer, were content with his promise; and so taking vp the candle lighted him to bedde, where we leaue him. And therefore affoone as may bee Gentlemen, looke for *Francescoes* further fortunes, and after that my *Farewell to follie*, and then adieu to all amorous Pamphlets.

FINIS.

¶ Imprinted at London by Thomas Orwin for N. L. and Iohn Busbie, and are to bee folde at the *West ende of Paules Church*.







XVIII.

FRANCESCOS FORTUNES.

1590.





FRANCESCOS  
FORTUNES:

Or,

The second part of *Greenes*  
*Neuer too late.*

*VVherein is discoursed the fall of Loue, the bitter  
fruites of Follies pleasure, and the repen-  
tant forrowes of a reformed man.*

*Sero, sed serio.*

*Robertus Greene in Artibus  
Magister.*



*Imprinted at London for N. L. and  
Iohn Butbie. 1590.*





To the right Worshipfull *Thomas*  
*Burnaby Esquier*, Robert Greene wish-  
eth increase of all honorable vertues.

**T***He Athenians counted such men unworthie  
their Common wealth as were ingratfull:  
and Plato seeing an vnthankfull man  
prosper, said, see men of Greece the Gods are prooued  
vniust; for they haue laden a thistle with fruite.  
VVhen (right VVorshipfull) these reasons entred into  
my reach, and that I sawe how odious in elder time  
ingratefull men were to all estates and degrees; least  
I might be stained with such a hatefull blemish, hauing  
receiued many friendly, nay fatherly fauours at your  
hands, I resolued to indeuour how I might shewe the  
depth of my affection towards your VVorship, I found  
my abilitie was not answerable to my desires to  
proportionate equall requitall to your deserts, so that  
I onely thought to make thanks my pay mistris, and  
so passe ouer your good turne with the old prouerb,*

God and Saint Francis thank you. *Yet when I perceived great men had taken little gifts, I tooke heart at grasse, and imboldened my selfe to present you with a Pamph[let] of my penning, called my Nunquam fera est: which your VVorship so gratefully accepted, measuring my will more than the worth; that hauing made my second part, wherein is discoursed the sequell of Francescoes further fortunes, I thought to shrowde it vnder your patronage: I haue discovered herein the other follies of his youth, and how at last, repentance stroke in him such a remorse, that his sorrowe for his sinnes were more than the pleasures conceipted in his vanities. I haue from the loue of a lasciuious Curtizan brought him to the VVife of his youth: the storie necessarie for yong Gentlemen, and not offensive vnto graue eares: for the most seuerer Stoick of all that seekes a knot in a rush, may herein finde some sentence woorth the marking. And though you as Virgill hold Ennius, yet you may out of his droffe gather some golde. They which thinke there is no God to their Goddesse, may here finde that wanton loues are the readie paths to preiudice, and that effeminate follies are the efficient causes of dyre disparagement, and that there is no Iewel like the gift of an honest wife. But whatsoeuer it is, all is shrowded vnder your fauour:*

*which hoping you will as gratefullie patronage as the  
former, I wish your VVorship as manie  
good fortunes as your self can  
desire, or I imagine.*

Your Worships adopted  
sonne in all humble du-  
tie to commaund.

*Robert Greene. /*





To the Gentlemen Readers

*health.*

**I**F (Gentlemen) I had not promised the further discourse of *Francescos* fortunes, this Pamph[*l*]et had not come to the presse : but seeing promise vvas debt, and fundrie made challenge at the Stationers shoppe, that I should bee a man of my word. To fatisfie therefore al my well wishers, I haue written what befell *Francesco* after he had forsaken his *Infida*, no great aduentures, but you may see plotted downe many passions full of repentant sorrowes, and reade many of his Sonnets that hee made in remorse of minde ; such as they bee they are yours, or what my pen can doo, but looke for it in more deeper matters.

*Yours Robert Greene. /*



*In laudem Authoris.*

*T*hough wanton Horace writ of Loues delite,  
And blythlie chaunted of his lasse,  
Bonny and bright as any glasse :  
Yet did the Poet Odes and Satyres write,  
Wherein he taught fond youth  
That follie hatcheth ruth,  
And with his toyes  
Mixt vertues ioyes :  
So by his workes he reapt immortall praise.

*Let him that writes the fall of Louers fits,  
Of beautie and her scortching fires,  
And fancie and her fond desires :  
If vnto vertues lore he wrest his wits,  
And pen downe follies fall,  
Whereto yong youth is thrall,  
Haue honor then  
To grace his pen :  
But enuie liues too much in these our daies.*

Richard Hake.

*Vertutis comes inuidia. /*

R. S.



*The Bee is praise for labour, not for ease,  
The more she workes the richer is her hiue :  
The little Ant that teacheth men to striue,  
Is fam'd for that her labours neuer cease.*

*The more the fruite, more precious is the tree ;  
The more the fish, more valued is the streame ;  
The sweetest night when many stars doo gleame ;  
The better ground that brings most graine we see.*

*The more it workes, the quicker is the wit ;  
The more it writes, the better to be steemed :  
By labour ought mens wills and wits be deemed,  
Though dreaming dunces doo inueigh against it.*

*But write thou on, though Momus sit and frowne,  
A Carters ligge is fittest for a Clowne.*

Bonum quo communius,  
eo melius. /



### Greenes Neuer too late.

*Nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via.*

**N**O sooner did *Phæbus* burnish the heauen with his brightnesse, and deckt in a glorious diadem of chrisolites, had mounted him on his Coach to lighten the Lampe that makes *Flora* beauteous, but the Palmer was vp and at his Orysons, beeing as deuoute in his thoughts as hee was mindfull of his trauels: walking in the garden all alone, and seeing the Sunne new peeping out of the East, he began to meditate with himselfe of the state of man, comparing his life to the length of a spanne, or the compasse of the Sunne, who rising bright and orient, continueth but his appointed course, and that oftentimes shadowed with so many Clowdes, and strainde with a fable vale of such thicke fogges, that he is more darkened with stormes than beautified with light: and if it fortune his shine is without blemish, yet he setteth and that more oft

in a folde of Clowdes, than in a cléere Skie: fo man borne in the pride of beautie or pompe of wealth, bee his honors equall with his fortunes, and hee as happie as *Augustus*; yet his life hath but his limittes, and that clogged with fo many cares and croffes, that his daies are more full of miseries than of pleasures, and his difaster mishaps are more than his prosperous fortunes: but if the ftarres grace him with all fauourable aspects, and that hée / liue full of content in many honours and much wealth, yet his prime hath his Autum, his faire blossomes turnes to tawnie leaues, age will shake him by the shoulder, and nature will haue his due, that at laft he must fet with the Sunne, and perhaps in fuch a clowde of finne, as his riling may be in a ftorme of sorrowes. Thus did the Palmer meditate with himfelve, béeing penitent for the follies of his youth, that at laft thinking to be as muficall to himfelve, as the birds were melodious, he chaunted out this Ode.

*The penitent Palmers Ode.*

*Whilome in the winters rage  
A Palmer old and full of age,  
Sat and thought vpon his youth,  
With eyes, teares, and harts ruth:  
Being all with cares yblent,  
When he thought on veares mifpent.*

*When his follies came to minde,  
 How fond loue had made him blinde,  
 And wrapt him in a field of woes,  
 Shadowed with pleasures shoes,  
 Then he sighed and said alas,  
 Man is sinne and flesh is grasse.  
 I thought my mistris haire were gold.  
 And in their lockes my heart I folde:  
 Her amber tresses were the sight  
 That wrapped me in vaine delight:  
 Her yuorie front, her pretie chin,  
 Were stales that drew me on to sin:  
 Her starrie lookes, her Christall eyes,  
 Brighter than the Sunnes arise:  
 Sparkling pleasing flames of fire,  
 Yoakt my thoughts and my desire,  
 That I gan crie ere I blin,  
 Oh her eyes are paths to sin. |  
 Her face was faire, her breath was sweete,  
 All her lookes for loue was meete:  
 But loue is follie this I knowe,  
 And beautie fadeth like to snowe.  
 Oh why should man delight in pride,  
 Whose blossome like a deaw doth glide:  
 When these supposes toucht my thought,  
 That world was vaine and beautie nought,  
 I gan sigh and say alas,  
 Man is sinne and flesh is grasse.*

The Palmer hauing ended this Ode, sat in a great dump in the garden, when his Host accompanied with his wife, desirous to heare out *Francescos* fortune, were come into the place, and gaue him the *bon iorno* thus. Courteous Palmer, a kinde salute to waken you from your mornings meditation. I see you keepe the prouerbe for a principle, to bed with the Bee and vp with the Larke: no sooner the Sunne in the Skie but you are at your Oryfons, either ruminating passions or penance, either some old remembrance or some newe reuerse. Howfoeuer (gentle Palmer) tis no manners to enter too farre into your thoughts, and therefore leauing your secrets to your selfe, *Come stata la vostra Signoria quest a matina*. The Palmer that had learned a little broken Italian, seeing his honest host in such a merie moode made this answer. *Io sto ben signior diu merce, ringratiandoui sonnamenti di vostra grande cortesia*, holding it fit for my fortunes to haue many cares and little sleepe, that my pennance may be great sith my sinnes are many: long slumbers are for idle persons, not for penitent Palmers; and sweete dreames are no instances of hartie deuotion; therefore doo I watch with the mouse to argue my selfe miserable, and enioyne my selfe to much paines, because I am combred with many passions. This morning entring into this garden, I fawe by the workes of

nature the course of the world : for when I sawe *Floras* glorie shut vp in the foldes of *Iris* / frownes, I began to consider that the pride of man was like the pompe of a flower, that to day glories in the field and to morrowe is in the furnace : that we be like the flies *Hemeræ*, that take life with the Sunne and dye with the deaw ; that our honors are compared to the blossomes of a Cedar, which vanish ere they begin to burnish, and al our triumphs like characters written in snowe, that printed in a vapour, at the least Sunne shine discover our vanitie, for they are as soone melted as our pleasures are momentarie. Tied by Fates to this fickle state, wee haue nothing more certaine than to dye, nor nothing more vncertaine than the houre of death : and therefore when I call to minde the follies of my youth, how they haue been tickled with vice, I couet in the flower of mine yeares to repent and amend : for

*Nunquam sera est, ad bonos mores via.*

You do well sir (quoth the Gentleman) in al your actions to consider the end ; for he that fore repents, foresees many perrills. Had I wist is a great fault, and after wits are bitten with many sorrowes : therefore such as gréeue at their follies, & couet to preuent dangerous fortunes, they which take an antidote of grace against the deadly aconiton of sinne, and with present remorse preuent



ensuing vanities: such indeed, as they liue well, shall dye blessed. But leauing this humour till another time, you may see by our earely rising how my wife and I were delighted with your euenings parlie: for trust me sir, desire of *Francescos* further fortunes made vs thus watchfull, and therefore seeing the morning is gray and our longing great, and yet a good while to breakefast, if your leifure may afford so much, I pray you sit downe and tell vs what was the ende of his loues, and the effects of his repentance. The Palmer verie willing to pleasure his courteous host, sat him downe in an Arbour and began thus.

*The Palmers tale of  
Francesco.*

AS soone as *Francesco* awakt from his slumber, and began to enter further into the consideration of *Infidas* coufenage, his heart throbd at his follies, and a present passion of his great misfortunes so payned him, that all perplexed he began againe to sing his former song, and to say that womens thoughts were like to the leaues of a Date tree that change colours with the winde, in a moment figuring out sorrowe with teares, and in that instant deciphering pleasure with smiles: neither too resolute with the Stoickes to yeeld to no passions, nor too absolute with the *Esseni* to surfet

with ouer much chafitie : their defires (quoth he) refemble *Æolus* forhead, that next euery ftorme contains a calme : their deedes are like Almanacks that decipher nothing but vncertaintie ; either too fcrupulous with *Daphne* to contemne all, or too voluptuous with *Venus* to defire all, and ftraight neither flefh nor fifh as the Porpus, but time pleafers, to content themfelues with varietie of fancies. In this humorous melancholie hee arofe vp and raunged about the Citie, defpayring of his eftate as a man pennyleffe, and therefore impatient becaufe he knewe not how to redrefse his miferies : to relie vppon the helpe of a Curtizan, he fawe by experience was to hang hope in the ayre : to ftand vpon the fauour of friends, that was bootelefse ; for he had fewe in the Citie, as being but a ftraunger there, and fuch as he had were wonne with an Apple, trencher friends, and therefore to bee left with the puffe of the leaft blaft of aduerfities. To goe home to his wife to faire *Iſabel*, that was as hard a cenfure as the fentence of death ; for fhame of his follies made him afhamed to fhewe his face to a woman of fo high defarts. In this perplexitie hee passed ouer three or foure daies till his purfe was cleane emptie, / his fcore great, and his hofteffe would trust him for no more money, but threatened him, if present payment were not made, to lay him in prifon.

This newes was hard to *Francesco*, that knewe not how to auoyd the preiudice, only his refuge was to preuent such a misfortune to carrie his apparell to the Brokers, and with great losse to make money to pay for his diet: which once discharged, he walkt vp and downe as a man forlorne, hauing neither coyne nor credite. Necessitie y<sup>e</sup> stingeth vnto the quick, made him fet his wits on the tenter, and to stretch his braines as high as *Ela*, to see how he could recouer pence to defray his charges by any sinister meanes to salue his forrowes: the care of his parents and of his owne honor perswaded him from making gaine by labour: he had neuer been brought vp to any mechanicall course of life. Thus euery way destitute of meanes to liue, he fight out this old sayd sawe, *Miserrimum est fuisse beatum*: yet at last, as extremities searce very farre, he calde to minde that he was a scholler, and that although in these daies Arte wanted honor, and learning lackt his due, yet good letters were not brought to so lowe an ebbe, but that there might some profite arise by them to procure his maintenance. In this humour he fell in amongst a companie of Players, who perswaded him to trie his wit in writing of Comedies, Tragedies, or Pastorals, and if he could performe anything worth the stage, then they would largelie reward him for his paines. *Francesco* glad of this motion, seeing

a meanes to mittigate ſ̄ extremitie of his want, thought it no dishonor to make gaine of his wit, or to get profite by his pen: and therefore getting him home to his chamber writ a Comedie, which ſo generally pleaſed all the audience, that happie were thoſe Aſtors in ſhort time that could get any of his workes, he grewe ſo exquisite in that facultie. By this meanes his want was releued, his credit in his hoſts houſe recouered, his apparell in greater brauerie then it was, and his purſe well lined with Crownes.

At this diſcourſe of *Franceſco* the Gentleman tooke his / gueſt by the hand and broke off his tale thus. Now gentle Palmer, ſeeing we are fallen by courſe of prattle to parlie of Playes, if without offence, doo me that fauour to ſhewe me your iudgement of Playes, Playmakers and Players. Although (quoth the Palmer) that ſome for being too lauiſh againſt that facultie, haue for their ſatiricall inuectiues been well canuaſed, yet ſeeing here is none but our ſelues, and that I hope what you heare ſhall be troden vnder foote, I will flatlie ſay what I can both euen by reading and experience. The inuention of Comedies were firſt found amongſt the *Greekes*, and practiſed at *Athens*: ſome thinke by *Menander* whom *Terence* ſo highlie commends in his *Heautontimorumenon*. The reaſon was, that vnder the couert of ſuch pleaſant and Comicall

euents, they aymed at the ouerthrowe of many vanities that then raigned in the Citie: for therein they painted out in the perfons the courfe of the world, how either it was graced with honor, or difcredited with vices: There might you fee leueld out the vaine life that boasting *Thrafes* vfe, smoothed vp with the felfe conceipt of their owne excellence; the miserable eftate of couetous parents, that rather let their fonnes taft of any misfortunes, than to releuee them with the superfluitie of their wealth: the pourtraiture of parafiticall friends and flattering *Gnatos*, that only are time pleafers and trencher friends, which footh yong Gentlemen subtellie in their follies as long as they may: *Ex corum fullo viuere* was fet out in liuely colours. In thofe Comedies the abufe of Bawdes that made fale of honeft virgins, and liued by the fpoyle of womens honors, was deeply difcouered. To be fhort, Lecherie, Couetoufneffe, Pride, felfe-loue, difobedience of parents, and fuch vices predominant both in age and youth were fhott at, not onely with examples, and instances to feede the eye, but with golden fentences of morrall works to pleafe the eare. Thus did *Menander* win honor in *Greece* with his works, & reclaime both old & yong for their vanities, by ſ̄y pleafant effects of his Comedies. After him this facultie grew to be famous in *Rome*, practifed / by *Plautus*, *Terence*, and other that

excelled in this qualitie, all ayming as *Menander* did in all their workes to suppressse vice and aduance vertue. Now, so highlie were Comedies esteemed in those daies, that men of great honor and graue account were the Actors, the Senate and the Consuls continuallie present, as auditors at all such sports, rewarding the Author with rich rewards, according to the excellencie of the Comedie. Thus continued this facultie famous, till couetousnesse crept into the qualitie, and that meane men greedie of gaines did fall to practise the acting of such Playes, and in the Theater presented their Comedies but to such onely, as rewarded them well for their paines: when thus Comedians grewe to bee mercenaries, then men of accompt left to practise such pastimes, and disdained to haue their honors blemisht with the stain of such base and vile gaines: in so much that both Comedies and Tragedies grew to lesse accompt in *Rome*, in that the free sight of such sports was taken away by couetous desires: yet the people (who are delighted with such nouelties and pastimes) made great resort, paide largely, and highly applauded their doings, in so much that the Actors, by continuall vse grewe not onely excellent, but rich and insolent. Amongst whome in the daies of *Tully* one *Roscus* grewe to be of such exquisite perfection in his facultie, that he offered to contend with the Orators of that time in gesture,

as they did in eloquence ; boasting that he could expresse a passion in as many fundrie actions, as *Tully* could discourfe it in varietie of phrafes : yea fo prowde he grewe by the daylie applaufe of people, that he looked for honour and reuerence to bee done him in the ftreetes : which felfe conceipt when *Tully* entred into with a pearcing infight, he quipt at in this manner.

It chanced that *Rofcius* & he met at a dinner, both guefts vnto *Archias* the Poet, where the proud Comedian dared to make comparifon with *Tully* : which infolencie made the learned Orator to growe into thefe termes ; why *Rofcius*, / art thou proud with *Efops* Crow, being pranct with the glorie of others feathers? of thy felfe thou canft fay nothing, and if the Cobler hath taught thee to fay *Aue Caesar*, difdain not thy tutor, becaufe thou prateft in a Kings chamber : what fentence thou vttereft on the ftage, flowes from the censure of our wittes, and what fentence or conceipte of the inuention the people applaud for excellent, that comes from the fecrets of our knowledge. I graunt your action, though it be a kind of mechanical labour ; yet wel done tis worthie of praife : but you worthleffe, if for fo fmall a toy you waxe proud. At this *Rofcius* waxt red, and bewraied his imperfection with filence : but this check of *Tully* could not keepe others from the blemifh of that fault, for it

grew to a generall vice amongst the Actors, to excell in pride as they did exceede in excellence, and to braue it in the streets, as they bragge it on the stage: so that they reuel'd it in *Rome* in such costely roabes, that they seemed rather men of great patrimonie, than such as liued by the fauour of the people. Which *Publius Seruilius* very well noted; for hée being the sonne of a Senatour, and a man very valiant, met on a day with a player in the streetes richly apparrelled, who so farre forgot himselfe, that he tooke the wall of the young noble man, which *Seruilius* taking in disdaine, counter-checkt with this frump: My friend (quoth hee) bee not so bragge of thy filken roabes, for I sawe them but yesterday make a great shew in a broakers shop. At this the one was ashamed, and the other smilde, and they which heard the quip, laught at the folly of the one & the wit of the other. Thus sir haue you heard my opinion briefly of plaies, that *Menander* deuised them for the suppressing of vanities, necessarie in a common wealth, as long as they are vsed in their right kind; the play makers worthy of honour for their Arte: & players, men deseruing both prayse and profite, as long as they wax neither couetous nor insolent. I haue caused you sir (quoth ſ̄ gentlemã) to make a large digressiõ, but you haue resolued me in a matter that I long doubted of: and therefore I pray you /



again to *Francesco*. Why then thus quoth the Palmer: After he grew excellent for making of Comedies, he waxt not onely braue, but full of Crownes: which *Infida* hearing of, and hauing intelligence what course of life he did take; thought to cast foorth her lure to reclaime him, though by her vnkindnesse he was proued haggard; for she thought that *Francesco* was such a tame foole that he would be brought to strike at any stale: decking her selfe therefore as gorgiously as she could, painting her face with the choyce of all her drugges, she walkt abroade where she thought *Francesco* vsed to take the ayre. Loue and Fortune ioyning in league so fauoured her, that according to her desire she met him. At which incounter I geffe, more for shame than loue she blusht; and fild her countenance with such repentant remorse (yet hauing her lookes full of amorous glaunces) that she seemed like *Venus*, reconciling her selfe to forward *Mars*. The sight of *Infida* was pleasing in the eyes of *Francesco*, and almost as deadly as the basilisk: that had hee not had about him *Moly* as *Vlisses*, he had been inchaunted by the charmes of that wylie *Circes*; but the abuse so stucke in his stomack that she had profered him in his extremitie, that he returned all her glaunces with a frowne, and so parted. *Infida* was not amated with his angry moode, as one that thought loues furnace of

force to heate the coldest Amatif, and the sweete words of a woman as able to draw on desire, as the *Syrens* melody the passengers. What quoth shee, though for a while he be cholerick, Beautie is able to quench the flame, as it sets hearts on fire; as *Helens* faultes angered *Paris*, so her fauours pleased *Paris*: though she were false to *Menelaus*, yet her faire made him brook her follies: Women are priuiledgd to haue their words and theyr wils, and whome they kill with a frowne they can reuiue with a smile. Tush, *Francesco* is not so froward, but he may bee wonne, hee is no *Saturnist* to beare anger long, hee is soone hot and soone colde, cholerick and kinde harted; who though he be scolded away with bitter words, he will be reclaimed / againe with sweete kisses; a womans teares are Adamant, and men are no harder than Iron, and therefore may bee drawne to pitie their passions. I will faine, flatter, and what not, to get againe my *Francesco*; for his purse is ful, and my coffers wax emptie. In this humor taking pen and paper, she wrote a letter to him to this effect.

*Infida to Francesco, wisheth what  
he wants in health or wealth.*

**I**F my outward penance (*Francesco*) could discover my inward passions, my sighes bewray my sorrowes, or my countenance my miseries, then

should I looke the most desolate of all, as I am the most distrest of all ; and the furrowes in my face bee numberlesse, as the griefes of my heart are matchles : But as the feathers of y<sup>e</sup> *Halciones* glister most against the forest storme, and *Nylus* is most calme against a deluge : so the sorrowes of my minde are so great that they smother inwardly, though they make no outward appearance of mishap. All these miseries *Francesco* grow from the consideration of mine owne discourtesies : for when I thinke of thy constancie, thy faith, thy feature, and thy beautie, and weigh with my selfe how all these vowed vnto *Infida*, they were lost by the disloyaltie of *Infida*: I call it in question, whether I had better dispaire and die, or in hope of thy fauour linger out my life. Penance of free will merits pardons of course, and griefes that grow from remorse, deserue to bee salued with ruth. I confesse *Francesco* that I wrongd thee, and therefore I am wroong at y<sup>e</sup> heart : but so doth the *Idea* of thy perfection, & the excellence of thy vertues frame a restles passiō in my heart, that although thou shouldest now to loath me, I cannot cease to loue thee. Oh consider, women haue their faults and their follies, & act y<sup>e</sup> in an houre which they repēt al their life after. Though *Mars* & *Venus* brabled, they were friends after brawls, for a louers iar ought not to bee a perpetuall discord but like a sunshine shower,

ÿ be it neuer so sharp is accoũted no storme : forgiue / and forget *Francesco* then hartelie, that I repent so deeply: grace thy *Infida* againe with one smile, ease her impatient passions with thy sweete presence : and assure thy selfe shee will satisfie with loue, what shee hath offended with follie. Bones that are broken & after set again, are the more stronger: where the Beech Tree is cut, there it growes most hard: reconciled friendship is the sweetest amitie. Then be friends with thy *Infida* : looke on her, and but visite her : and if she winne not thy loue with her wordes, and shewe her selfe so penitent, that thou shalt pardon: then let her perish in her owne misfortunes, and die for the want of thy fauour. Farewell.

*Thine euer,  
dispayring Infida.*

THIS letter shee sealed vp and sent it by a secret friend to *Francesco* : who at the first, knowing from whence it came, would scarcely receiue it; yet at last willing to heare what humor had made the Curtizan write vnto him; hee broke ope the seales and read the former contents: which when he had thoroughly perused; hee found himselfe perplexed: for the cunning of her flatterie made ÿ poore man passionate. In so much that sitting down with

the letter in his hand ; he began thus to meditate with him selfe.

Why doost thou vouchsafe *Francesco* to looke on her letters that is so lewd, to view her lines that are powdred with flatterie, to heare her charmes that seeke thy preiudice, to listen to such a *Calipso* that aimes onely at thy subftãce, not at thy person? While thou wert poore her forehead was full of frowns, and in her looks fate the stormes of disdaine : but when she sees thou hast fethred thy nest, & hast crowns in thy purse, shee would play the horf-leach to suck awaie thy wealth: & now would shee be thy harts gold, while she left thee not one dram of golde. Oh *Francesco* she hides her claws, but looks for her pray with the Tyger, she weepes / with the Crocodile, and smiles with the Hiena, and flatters with the Panther, and vnder the couert of a sugred baite, shrowdes the intent of thy bane. Knowest thou not that as the Marble dropps against rayne, so their teares forepoynt mischiefe, that the fauours of a Curtizan are like the songs of the Grafhoper, that euer foretel some fatal disparagement. Beware then *Francesco* (*Piscator ictus sepit*) shee hath once burnt thee, feare fire with the Childe: shee hath croft thee with disdaine, couet not her with desire: hate her, for in loathing such a one thou louest thy God. Returne not with the dog to the vomit,

wallow not with swine in the myre, foresee not the best & follow the worst. And yet *Francesco* trust me shee is faire, beautifull and wise : I but with that a Curtizan : perhaps she will now loue thee faithfully ; if she doe, fond man, is not her hartie liking, hatefull lust? dangerous to thy bodie, and damnation to thy Soule. Tis a saying not so common as true, that he which looketh continually against the Sunne shall at last be blinde; that who so handleth pitch must needs be defiled, the tree that abideth many blasts, at last falleth by the Carpenters axe, the bird y<sup>e</sup> striketh at euery stale cannot long escape the snare, so long goeth the pitcher to the brooke, that at last it comes broken home, and hee that securely swimmeth in sinne shall surely be drowned in iniquitie : who so bindeth two fins together shall neuer be vnreuedged in the one, and he that delighteth to offend in youth, shall no doubt feele the punishment. *Quod defertur non aufertur.* Though GOD for a time suffer a man to wallow in his owne wickednesse, and to say vnto his soule, *Tush the Lord regardeth not the way of sinners,* nor suspecteth the misdeedes of men, he is slow to wrath and proane to pittie : yet the Lord at last looketh downe from heauen and reuengeth all his grieuous finnes with a heauy plague, yea hee rooteth him out from the face of the earth and his place is no more seene. Consider

then *Francesco*, if the Lord suffer thee in thy iniquitie and defer present punishment, it is because his mercie may / seeme the more, and thy sinne the greater. He that hath the droppe, drinketh while he bursteth, and yet not satisfied; the Horseleach hath two daughters that neuer crie enough; who so is stung with the Serpent *Dipsas*, burneth, but can neuer be cooled: and who so is inflamed with sinne, thirsteth continuallie after wickednes, vntill he hath supped the dregges of Gods displeasure, to his owne destruction. Beware by this, fall not into the trap, when thou seeest the traine: for knowing the sinne, if thou offendest against thine own conscience; the Lord will send vpon thee cursing, trouble, and shame, in all that thou settest thy hand vnto, and will not cease to reuenge vntill thou perish from off the face of the earth. Oh hast thou not at home an *Ifabel* that is the wife of thy youth and the onely friend of thy bosome, indued with such exquisite beautie and exceeding vertue, that it is hard to iudge whether the pure complexion of her bodie, or the perfect constitution of her minde, holds the supremacie. And is not a peaceable woman and of a good heart, the gift of the Lord? There is nothing so much worth as a woman well instructed: a shamefast and faithfull woman is a double grace, and there is no treasure to bee compared to her

continent mind: but as the glistering beames of ſun when it arifeth, decketh the heauen: ſo the beautie of a good wife adorneth the houſe: & as golden pillers doe ſhine vpon the ſockets of filuer, ſo doth a faire face in a vertuous minde. Shall the feare of God then *Franceſco* be ſo farre from thine eyes as to leaue thine owne wife and imbrace a Curtizan, to leaue the law of God, and ſuffer thy heart to be ſubuerted by luſt. The Lyon ſo abhorreth this crime, as he killeth the Lyoneſſe for committing this fact. The Storke neuer medleth but with his mate. The Iacinth ſtone wil not be worne on the finger of an adulterer, nor the Oliue grow, if plāted by one that leadeth his life in vnlawfull luſts: and wilt thou ſhew thy ſelf more careles in this crime than bruit beaſts, more reckles than vnreasonable creatures, more ſenſeles than ſtones: yea far leſſe in vertue than a man, & far more in vice thā a beaſt. Thē wil the Lord look down from heauen, and plague thee with a heauy curſe. At this claufe ſtanding a great while in a maze, at laſt hee ſtept to his ſtandifh, and wrote this anſwere.

*Franceſco wiſheth to Infida remorse of  
conſcience, & regard of honeſty.*

I Haue read thy letters *Infida*, wherein I hoped to haue foūd more honeſty and leſſe vanity; a



figne of better thoughtes and lines of more remorfe ; else had I left them sealed, as I couet to leaue thee vnseene. But I perceiue as no time wil alter the Panther from his spots, the Moufe from hir feare, nor the Tyger frō his fiercenes ; so neither date nor reason will change the conditiōs of a Curtizan : Thou writest thou art penitent, so I think, but it is not for thy sinnes ; but that thou hast not libertie enough to sin, enioynd by some ouerthwart neighbour to be more honest than thou wouldst be, which is as great a penāce to one of thy trade, as a long pilgrimage to a sorrowful Palmer. A teare in a strōpets eie, is like heat drops in a bright sunshine : as much to be pittied, as the Crocadile when she weeps : a Curtezans laughter is like to lightning, ȳ beautifies the Heauē for a blaze but forerūs stormes and thunder. Art thou in loue with *Francesco*, marrie gippe Giglet, thy loue sits on thy tonges end, readie to leape off assoone as thy mouthe opens : and thine honestie hangs at thine eye, which falls away with euerie wink : thou art enueigled with my beawty, that is because thou hearest I haue a rich purse, not a faire face : for thou valewest as much of beawtie without pence, as a horfe of a fayre stable without prouēder. Thou art entised by my vertues, I wonder how that word vertue comes in thy mouth, when it is so far from thy heart, and yet

no maruaile, for the most infectious Serpents haue sweetft breathes: and the commonest Curtezans, the most curteous speeches.

Thou wouldest haue mee grace thee with my prefence, and renew our olde friendshippe: fo I will, when I / meane to giue my bodie to ſ Surgeon, & my Soule to the Diuell: for in louing thee, I muſt needes graunt this Legacie. Thy reason is, that bones once broken, vnited againe, are the ſtrongest: I would thy neck might make the experience, and then I would truſt the inſtance. But why peſter I ſo much paper to ſo lewd a perſon? as I found thee at the firſt, I leaue thee at the laſt, euen empty gordge to baite at a full purſe, incontinent, falſe, periured; as far from God as thou art friend to the Diuell: and ſo adieu.

*Francesco penitent, and therefore  
a perſecutor of curtizans.*

**A**Fter hee had written this letter he ſent it to *Infida*, who reading it, and ſeeing ſhee could get no fauour at the hands of *Francesco*; that wrought ſhe neuer ſo ſubtilly, yet her traines were diſcouered, that her painted luers could not make him ſtoop, ſo had he with reaſon refelled his former follie: whē ſhe perceiued (I ſay) that all her ſwēet potions were found to bee poyſons, though ſhee couered them neuer ſo clarkly: ſhe

fel not in dispaire with ouermuch loue, but swore in her selfe to intend him some secrete preiudice, if euer it lay in her by any meanes to procure it: but leauing her to the Iustice of him that poyseth the deedes of such impenitent persons in his ballance, and committing *Francesco* to the making of some strange comedie, I will shew you how Fortune made an assault to the vnfaigned affection of fayre *Isabel*.

*The discourse of Isabels Fortunes.*

*I* *Sabel* liuing thus pensue in that shee wanted the prefence of her *Francesco*, yet for her patience and vertue grew so famous that all *Caerbranck* talked of her per/fections: her beautie was admired of euerie eye, her qualities applauded in euerie mans eare, that she was esteémed for a patterne of vertuous excellence throughout the whole Citie. Amongst the rest that censured of her curious faouours, there was one *Signor Bernardo*, a Bourgomaster of the Citie, who chauncing on a time to passe by the doore where *Isabel* sojourned; feeing so sweete a Saint, began to fall enamoured of so faire an obiect: and although he was olde, yet the fire of lust crept into his eyes and so inflamed his heart, that with a disordinate desire he began to affect her: but the renowme of her chastitie was such, that it almost quatted those sparkes that heated

him on to such lawlesse affection. But yet when he calde to minde that want was a great stumbling blocke, and sawe the necessitie that *Isabel* was in, by the absence of *Francesco*, he thought gold would bee a readie meanes to gaine a womans good will, and therefore dispayred not of obtaining his purpose. After that this *Signor Bernardo* had well noted the exquisite perfection of her bodie, and how she was adorned with most speciall gifts of nature, he was so snared with the fetters of lasciuious Concupiscence, as reason could not redresse what lust had ingrafted; his aged yeares yéelded vnto vanitie, so that he turned away his minde from God, and durst not lift vp his eyes vnto heauen, least it should be a witnesse of his wickednesse, or a corasue to his guiltie conscience: for the remembrance of God is a terrour to the vnrighteous, and the sight of his creatures is a sting to the minde of the reprobate. He therefore feeling his diuellish heart to bee perplexed with such hellish passions, careleslie cast off the feare of God from before his eyes, neither remembring that hée was an Elder to giue good counsaile, nor a Iudge in the citie to minister right: his hoarie haire could not hale him from sinne, nor his calling conuert him from filthinesse, but he gréedilie drunke vp the dregges of vnrighteousnesse, and carefullie busied his braines to oppresse the simple: and to obtaine his purpose laide his plot

thus. Being the chiefe / Bourgomafter in all the citie, he determined to make a priuie fearch for fome fufpected perfon; and being mafter of the watch himfelfe, to goe vp into her chamber, and there to difcouer the depth of his defire: fo he thought to ioyne loue and opportunitie in one vnion, and with his office and his age to wipe out all fufpition. Age is a crowne of glorie when it is adorned with righteoufneffe, but the dregges of difhonor when tis mingled with mifchiefe: for honourable age confifteth not in the tearme of yeares, nor is not meafured by the date of a mans daies, but godlie wifedome is the gray haire, and an vndefiled life is olde age. The Herbe grace the older it is, the ranker fmell it hath: the Sea ftarre is moft blacke being olde: the Eagle the more yeares, the more crooked is her bill; and the greater age in wicked men, the more vnrighteousneffe: which this *Signor Bernardo* tried true; for defire made him hate delay, and therefore within two or three nights, picking out a watch answerable to his wifh, hee himfelfe (as if it had been fome matter of great import) went abroade, and to colour his follie with the better fhadowe, hee fearched diuers houfes, and at laft came to the place where *Ifabel* lay, charging the hoft to rife and to fhewe him her chamber; for (quoth he) I muft conferre with her of moft fecret affaires. The good man of

the house obeyed willinglie, as one that held *Bernardo* in great reuerence, and brought him and the watch to the chamber doore. *Bernardo* taking a candle in his hand, bad them all depart till he had talked with the Gentlewoman : which they did, and he entring in shutting the doore, found her fast on sleepe ; which sight draue the olde Lecher into a maze ; for there seeing nature in her pride, lust inueagled him y more, that he sat on the bed side a great while viewing of her beautie : at last starting vp, he awakte her out of a swéete slumber. *Ifabel* looking vp, and seeing one of the Bourgomasters in the chamber (for *Bernardo* was knowne for his grautie and wealth of euey one in the Citie) she was amazed ; yet gathering her wits together, rayfing her selfe vp on her pil-<sup>\*</sup> / . . . . . low, she did him all the dutifull reuerence shee might, wondring what winde should driue him into y place : at last the old Churle began to affaile her thus.

*Bernardos discourse to Ifabel.*

**B**E not amazed (faire Gentlewoman) to see me thus suddainly and secretly arriued, neither let my prefence appale your senses : for I come not cruelly as a foe, but curteously as a friende. If my

\* Some leaves missing here in B. M. exemplar ; the following taken from the Bodleian Library edition, n. d.

comming ſeeme ſtrange, the cauſe is as ſtraight, and where neceſſitie forceth, there it is hard to ſtrive againſt the ſtream: hée that ſeeketh to way againſt his owne will, oftentimes kicketh againſt the prick: and he that ſtriveth to withſtand loue hoppeth againſt the hill. Theſe things conſidered (*Miſtreſſe Iſabel,*) if I offend in béeing too bold, your beauty ſhall beare the blame, as the / onely cauſe of this enterpriſe: for to omit all circumſtances, and to come to the matter, ſo it is, that ſince firſt mine eye fed of your ſwéet fauour, I haue béene ſo perplexed with the paſſions of loue, and haue étéen ſo déeplly drowned in the deſire of your perſon, that there is no torment ſo terrible, no paine ſo pinching, no woe ſo griuouſ, as the grieſe that hath griped me ſince I burnt in loue of your ſwéet ſelſe: ſith therefore my liking is ſuch, let my liking be repaide againe with loue: let my firme fancie be requited with mutuall affection, and in lieu of my good will conſent vnto méé, & be my Paramour. That ſin which is ſecretly committed is halfe pardoned: ſhée liueth chaſtly enough that liueth charily. The chamber doore is ſhut, no man either can deteét vs of any crime or dare ſuſpect vs of any folly. The credit which I carry in the Cittie ſhall be ſufficient to ſhrowde you from ſhame: my office ſhall be able to defend you from miſtruſt, and my gray haire a pumice ſtone to race out all ſuſpition, and

by this small offence (*Ifabel*) thou shalt both content mee, and purchase to thy selfe such a dutiful friend, as in all seruice thou maist command, not only readie to countenance thee with his credite, but to furnish al thy wants with his coyne: for what treasure and gold I haue shall be thine to vse. *Ifabel* hearing this subtile serpent to breathe out such wilie reasons, wondred to see a man of his calling so blinded with the vale of lasciuious lust, as to blaspheme so diuelishly against hys owne conscience, infomuch that for a good space shee fate astonished, vntill at last gathering her wits together, she burst forth into these speeches.

*Ifabels reply to Bernardo.*

**T**Is a saying (*Signor Bernardo*) both olde and true, that who so sinneth against his conscience, sinneth against his owne foule: and he that knoweth the lawe and wilfully disobeyeth, is worthy to be beaten with many stripes: which sentence of holy Writ I wish you to consider, and it will be a sufficient cooling carde to your inordinate desire. Hath God placed you as a Burgomaster of this Citty, and so a Iudge ouer his people to punish sinne, and will you maintaine wickednesse? Is it your office to vpholde the Law, and will you destroy it? Nay are you commaunded to cut off this sinne with infamie, and yet will you perfwade a



woman to defile her husbands bed? Is it your dutie to driue vs / from all vncleane lust, and will you draw mee to such follie? Is this the office of a Burgomaster, or beséemeth such thoughtes to the minde of an Elder? Doth the fommons of death appeare in your gray head, and yet fleshly desires raigne in your hart? Doth thine olde age impart a cleére conscience, and your inward appetite fraught with concupiscence? Oh howe pleafant a thing is it where gray headed men minister iudgment, and the Elders can giue good counsaile: but how perilous a thing is it for the ruler to be vnrighteous, or the Iudge of the people to delight in sinne? Such a man shall haue coales heaped vpon his head, & the wrath of the Lord shall consume his heritage. Threé sorts of men the Lord hateth, and he vtterly abhorreth the life of them, a poore man that is proude, a rich man that is a lyer, and an old adulterer that doateth and is vnchast. Hast thou then (*Signor Bernardo*) so sold thy selfe vnto sinne and sworne to worke wickednesse, that thou wilt prefer fading pleasure before lasting paine: and for the fulfilling of thy filthy lust, purchase perpetuall damnation. But put-case I were so carelesse of mine honour and honestie to yeelde to thy request, shoulde not thy selfe be a witnessse of my disloyaltie? would not mine owne workes cry out for vengeance to plague my wickednesse? Yes no doubt, after

thou hadst glutted thy fancie with the lothfomnesse of the finne, and the Spirit of God had toucht thy heart with the pricke of thy offence, thou wouldest both detest me as a mirrour of immodestie, and account mee for euer as a common harlot : for the Lord suffereth not the wicked to goe vnrewarded. She (saith the wiseman) that is common, & not content in her loue, and yeeldeth that which is proper to her husband into the possession of another man, disobeyeth the Law, maketh breach of her plighted troth, and lastly plaieth the whore in most hellish adultery : her children shall not take roote, nor her branches bring forth no frute, her name shall be forgotten. And shall I then knowing this, wilfully worke mine owne woe? Shall I repay the troath my husband reposes in mee, with such treacherie? Shal such guileful discourtesie bee a guerdon for his good will? No the feare of God is a fortresse against such folly : the loue that I beare to my husband is a shield to fence me from such shamelesse fancie : and the care of mine owne honor is a cōserue against such lawlesse concupiscence. When as you say that / finne secretly committed is halfe pardoned, and that she liueth *caste* that liueth *caute* : that the chamber doore is shut, that no man can espy our folly, and the place so secret that the offence cannot be preiudiciall to my good name : I answere, that I more esteeme the wrath of God than

the words of men : that I dread more to commit such a fact before the sight of the Almighty, then before the eyes of all the world.

Man iudgeth but the body, but God the soule : the one being but a small pinch, the other a perpetuall paine. He that breaketh wedlocke, and thinketh thus in his heart, who seeth mee, the misty clouds haue couered me, and I am compassed about with a fogge of darknes : my offence shall not be an obiect to any mans eyes, neither can my doing be discouered, for I am shrowded within the walls, whom neede I to feare : and as for the Lord he is mercifull, and will not remember any mans finnes : he is slow vnto wrath, and promiseth speedily to pardon the faults of the wicked. Such a one as feareth more the eye of mortal man then the sight of an immortal God, and knoweth not that the lookes of the Lord are ten thousand times brighter, then the beames of the Sunne, beholding the very thoughts of men, and searching the heart and the reynes, the same man shalbe punished with earthly plagues, he shall sodainly be taken in his owne trap, and shall fall before the face of euery man, because he preferred his owne pleasure before the feare of the Lorde. But alas, it is vnfit for the young Fawn to lead the old buck : for a blind man to be guide to him that hath his sight : and as vnméete for a simple woman to instruct a Bourgo-

maister and Elder of the Citty. Is it my part to exhort you vnto vertue, or rather is it not your duety to perfwade mee from vice: but I hope this proffer is but a tryall to make prooffe of mine honesty, and to sift at my secret intent: if otherwise, your will and your words be one, cease your suite, for you may long gape and yet neuer gaine that you looke for. *Signor Bernardo* hearing *Ifabel* so cunningly to confute his concludiue arguments, seeing she had infringed their reasons by the power of the law, thought to wrest her vpon a higher pinne, and to lay such a blot in her way as she should hardly wipe out: for\* . . . . . although he knewe she did rightly refell his follie, and partly perceiued her counsaile cooled the extreame of his desires, yet the feare of God was so farre from him, that he profecuted his intent thus.

*Signor Bernardos answer to Ifabels replie.*

**W**Hy *Ifabel* (quoth he) thinkest thou thy painted speaches, or thy hard denials shall preuaile against my pretended purpose? No, he is a coward that yeeldeth at the first shot, and he not worthie to weare the bud of beautie that is daunted with the first repulse. I haue the tree in my hand and meane to enioy the fruite: I haue beaten the bush and now will not let the birds

\* Here return to exemplar in B. Museum.

flie : and seeing I haue you here alone, your sterne lookes shall stand for no sterling : but if you consent, bee assured of a most trustie friend ; if not, hope for no other hap but open infamie. For thou knowest (*Isabel*) that a womans chiefeft treasure is her good name, & that she which hath crackt her credite is halfe hanged ; for death cuts off all miseries, but discredit is y<sup>e</sup> beginning of all sorrowes. Sith then infamie is worse than losse of life, assure thy selfe I will sting thee to the quicke ; for I will presentlie send thee to prison, and cause some Ruffian in the citie to sweare, that since y<sup>e</sup> absence of thy husband *Francesco*, he hath lien with thee, and for coyne vsed thee as his concubine : so shall I blemish thine honour, tye thee to some open punishment, and make thee a laughing stocke to the world, odious to thy friends, and to liue hated of thy husband : mine office and authoritie, my age and honour shall shadow my pretence, and helpe greatly to frame thy preiudice. Seeing then (*faire Isabel*) thou shalt by consent keepe the report of thy chastitie, & by deniall gaine shame & reproach, shewe thy selfe a wise woman, and of two euils chuse the least. *Isabel* hearing the mischieuous pretence of this subtill Lecher, and seeing he had so cunningly laid the snare that she could not auoid the trap, but either she must incurre the daunger / of the bodie or the destruction

of the foule, was so driuen into such a passionate dilemma that she burst foorth into teares, sighes, and plaints, which she blubbred foorth on this wife.

Alas (quoth she) most vile and vniust wretch, is the feare of God so farre from thy minde, that thou seekest not only to sacke mine honour, but to sucke my bloud? Is it not iniurie enough that thou seekest to spoyle mine honestie, but that you long to spill my life? Hath thy swéete loue pretended such bitter tast? Is this the fruite of your fained fancie? No doubt the cause must bee pernicious when the effect is so pestilent. Flatter not your selfe in this thy follie, nor sooth not thy thoughts in thy finnes; for there is a God that seeth and will reuenge, and hath promised that who bindeth two finnes together shall not be vnpunished in the one. But what auaieth it to talke of wisdome to a foole, or of the wrath of God to a wilfull reprobate? The Charmer charme hee neuer so wisely, charmes in vaine if the Adder be deaffe; and he casteth stones against the winde that seeketh to drawe the wicked from his follie: let me therefore (poore foule) more narrowlie consider mine owne case. I am perplexed with diuers doubtfull passions, and gréuous troubles affaileth me on euerie side: if I commit this crime though neuer so secretly, yet the Lord

is Καρδιογνωστης, and pearceth into the verie thoughts, and mine owne conscience will be a continuall witnesse against me of this wickednesse: *Stipendium peccati mors*, then what other hap can I hope for but perpetuall damnation, sith the Lord himselfe hath promised to bee a swift witnesse against all wilfull adulterers: And if I consent not vnto this vnrighteous wretch, I am like to be vniuſtlye accused of the like crime, and so shall I being guiltlesse, haue mine honour euer blemisht with infamie. By this meanes what a discredite shall I bring to my parents, to my husband and my children: the hoarie haire of my father shall be brought with sorrowe vnto the graue, *Francesco* shall be ashamed to shewe his face in the streates / of the Citie, and my poore babes shall bee counted as the feede of an harlot: and yet alas I my selfe altogether sacklesse. Why, my secret offence shal preuēt al this open shame; The Lord is slow to wrath, and his mercie exceedeth al his workes: hee wisheth not the death of a sinner; and heartie repentance pacifieth his displeasure. But oh vile wretch that I am, why doe I blaspheme thus against the Lord and his Law? why doe I breathe out these hellish speeches? Can I say I will repent at my pleasure? or shall I therefore sinne in hope because the Lorde is mercifull? No no, it is better for me to fall into thy handes and not commit the

offence, than to finne in the fight of the Lord : shal I not rather feare God than man ; and dread him more that killeth both soule and body, than him that hath power but to kill the bodie only ? Yet his feare shall be my defence. And with that shee rayfed her selfe vp, spitted in his face, and wished him to doe his worst : whereupon he called vp the watch, and commanded her to make her readie, for shee should to prison. Her Host wondring what the cause should bee, as a man priuie to her actions and the vertue of her life ; would haue giuen his word for her, that she should the next day answere whatfoeuer should be obiected against her : but his worde would not be taken ; for *Bernardo* was full of furie, & caried her away to prison ; where deepely grieued, and yet smothering her sorrow with patience, she laie the rest of the night : the next morrow assoone as day brake, she cald for pen and inck and wrote this mournfull Sonnet.

*Isabels Sonnet that she made in prison.*

*Veritas non quærit Angulos.*

No storme so sharp to rent the little Reede,  
 For fild it breakes though euery way it bend :  
 The fire may heat but not consume the Flint,  
 The gold in furnace purer is indeede. /



Report that fild to honour is a friend,  
 May many lies againſt true meaning mynt :  
     But yet at laſt,  
     Gainſt ſlaunders blaſt,  
 Truth doth the filly ſackles ſoule defend.

Though falſe reproach ſeeks honour to diſtaine,  
 And enuy bites the bud though nere ſo pure,  
 Though luſt doth ſeek to blemiſh chaſt deſire :  
 Yet truth that brookes not falſhoods ſlaunderous  
     ſtaine,  
 Nor can the ſpight of enuies wrath indure :  
 Will trie true loue from luſt in Juſtice fire :  
     And maulger all  
     Will free from thrall  
 The guiltles ſoule that keepes his footing ſure.

Where innocence triumpheth in her prime,  
 And guilt cannot approach the honeſt mind ;  
 Where chaſt intent is free from any miſſe,  
 Though enuie ſtriue, yet ſearching time  
 With piercing inſight will the truth out finde,  
 And make diſcouerie who the guiltie is :  
     For time ſtill tries  
     The truth from lies :  
 And God makes open what the world doth blinde.

*Veritas Temporis filia.*

*I* *Sabel* wetting her sonnet with teares, and pronouncing euery line with a sigh, fate in a dump. Whilest the fame of this fact was spread abroad throughout al *Caerbrâck*, euery man began fundrie coniectures as affection led them: her friendes forrowing suspected the cankred mind of the Burgomaster; yet for his calling durst not discouer their suspition: hir foes laughing faide, that dissembled holynes was a double sinne, and that the holiest countenance hath / not alwaies the honestest conscience: Both friend and foe notwithstanding wondring at the straunge chaunce, seeing her outward actions did manifest so many vertues. Well, to bee briefe, *Signor Bernardo* assembling the other Burgomasters of the towne into the common Hall, sent for *Ifabel* thither; at whose comming (as the nature of man is desirous of nouelties) a great prease of people was present, to heare y<sup>e</sup> matter throughly canvased: When *Ifabel* was thus brought before the bar, *Signor Bernardo* (who had suborned a young man in the Citie, solemnly to depose that hee had lyen with *Ifabel*;) began his inuectiue thus. I am forie graue Citizens and inhabitants of *Caerbranck*, that this day I am come to accuse *Ifabel*, whose vertues hitherto hath won her many fauours, and the outward shew of her good qualities hath been highly applauded of al men: but my conscience cōstraines me not to

cōceale fuch haynous fin, nor to smother vp fo great an offence without rebuke. I am one of the Iudges & Elders of the people, appoynted by God, chofen by the multitude, and conſtrained by the law, to haue no reſpect of perfōs, neither to be too rigorous to my foe, nor too partiall to my friend ; but with the ballance of equitie to meafure euery man according to his merite, and with the ſword of Iuſtice to vpholde vertue, and beate downe vice: This conſidered, I am forced to diſcouer a wicked deede that this *Iſabel* hath committed : and that is this.

This young man here preſent, for a certaine ſumme of money ; compounded to lie with *Iſabel*, and for pence had his pleaſure on her ; ſhe alluring him with fuch wylie amorettes of a Curtizan, that in her companie he hath conſumed all his ſubſtance : The young mans friends ſeeing his follie, and that no perſwaſions could diſſwade him from affecting her, made complaint vnto me : whereupon I examined him, and found him not onely guiltie of the crime, but tractable to be reclaimed from his follie : ſeeing then Citizens of *Caerbranck*, ſuch a Curtizan as this may vnder ſ̄ colour of holines ſhrowd much preiudice, & allure many of our youth to / miſchiefes, I thought it my duety to bring her into open infamie, that ſhe may be puniſhed for her fault, knowne for a harlot, and

from hencefoorth liue dispised and hated of all. For prooffe that shee hath liued long in this leawd kinde of life, this young man shall here before you all make present deposition ; and with that he reacht him a bible: whereon he swore that hee had long time conuerst dishonestly with *Isabel*, euer since the departure of her husband. At which oath the people that were Iurours in the cause, beleeuing the protestation of *Bernardo*, and the deposition of the youth, presently found hir guiltie: and then *Bernardo* and the rest of the Burgomasters gaue iudgement, that she should presently haue some open and seuerer punishment, & after be banished out of the town. Assoone as *Isabel* heard the censure, she appeald for no mercy, nor bashed any whit, as one desirous of fauour ; but lifting vp her eyes to heauen, onely sayd thus. O God which seeest the secrets of all hearts, and knowest all things before they come to passe, which descernerest the very inward thoughts, and triest the heart and the reines: Thou knowest that because I would not consent vnto the filthie lust of this doting lecher ; nor agree by defiling my husbands bed to fulfil his fleshly desires, that he hath slandered me with that crime wherof I was neuer guilty, that he hath produced this young man by sinister subornation to periure himself in a fault wheras not so much as in thought I comited such

a fact ; he hath to satisfie his malicious mind without cause deuised this false crime. I confesse O Lord to be a most grieuous offender, and to deserue farre greater punishment, but not for this deede. Heare then O Lord my prayer, and let the innocence of my case plead before thy deuine maiesty : if it be thy will, preuent his practises, confound his counsels, and let him which hath digged the pit for others, fall into the snare himselfe. Thou hast neuer as yet O Lorde left the succourles without helpe, but hast deliuered them which feare thee frō al aduersitie : thou didest set free *Ioseph* from the handes of his brethren which sought to spill his / bloud, and didst preuent the practises of *Saul*, intended against thy seruant *Dauid*: *Elizeus* being besieged within *Dotham* was not onely freed from his foes, but also guarded about with a troupe of holy Angels: *Elias* was preferued from the crueltie of *Iefabel*, and fed with Rauens. But chiefly in my case; howe mightily didst thou shrowde *Susanna* from the treacherie of the two Elders in rayfing vp young *Daniel* to maintaine her right? Nay who hath trusted in thy mercie, which hath come to mishappe? or who hath put his hope in thee, and hath suffered harme? So O Lord, if it be thy will thou canst disclose the deuise of this *Signor Bernardo*, and vnfoulde the follyes of this

false witness; helpe then O LORD, for in thee is my trust.

The people hearing the solemne protestation of sorrowful *Ifabel*, thought she had spoken these words to excuse her fault, but not that shee was guiltles of the fact; giuing more credite to the reuerend age of *Bernardo*, and the oath of the young man countenanst out by the Burgomaster; than to the young yeares of a simple woman, supposing her speeches were more of custome to cloak her follies, than of conscience to cleare her of that crime; and therefore they would haue returned her back againe vnto prison, till the day assigned for her further punishment. As shee was readie to be caried away, hee which had accused *Ifabel* start vp as a man lunaticke, and cried out vnto the people: Thus I haue finned men of *Caerbranck*, I haue finned; the thought of my present periurie is a hell to my conscience: for I haue sworne falsly against the innocent, and haue consented to condemne *Ifabel* without cause: and with that he discourst at the barre how *Signor Bernardo* had suborned him against the Gentlewoman, and how in all his life before he neuer was in her companie. Vppon which confession of the young man, the Burgomasters examined the matter more effectually, and found that *Ifabel* was cleare, chaste, honest and vertuous, and *Bernardo*

was a doting lecher: whereupon / they not onely amerfed him in a great fine, to bee payde to *Ifabel*, but put him for euer after from bearing any office in the Citie.

Thus was *Ifabel* deliuered from her enimies, and reckoned more famous for hir chafititie through al *Caerbranck*. This ftrange euent fspread abroad through all the countrey, and as fame flies fwift and far, fo at laft it came to the eares of *Francefco*: for he fitting in *Troynouant* at an ordinarie amongft other Gentlemen, heard this fortune of *Ifabel* reported at the table for ftraunge newes, by a Gentleman of *Caerbranck*, who brought in *Ifabel* for a myrrour of chafititie, and added this more, that fhe was married to a Gentleman of a ripe witte, good parentage, and well fkild in the liberall Sciences, but (quoth he) an vnthrift; and one that hath not beene with his wife this fixe yeares. At this all the table condemned him as paffing vnkinde, that could wrong fo vertuous a wife with abfence: He was filent and blusht, feeling the worme of his confcience to wring him; and that with fuch a fharpe fting, that asfoone as he got into his chamber, he fell to meditate with himfelfe of the great abufes he offered his wife, the excellence of her exterior perfection, her beautie, vertue, and other rare ornaments of nature prefented themfelues into his thoughts, that he

began not onely to be passing passionate; but deeply penitent, forrowing as much at his former follies, as his hope was to ioy in his ensuing good fortunes: Now he saw that *Omnia sub sole vanitas*: that beautie without vertue was like to a glorious flower without any operation, which the Apothecaries set in their shoppes for to be seene, but assoone as it withereth, they cast it into the furnace as an vnprofitable weede: that the imbracings of a Curtizan seeme they neuer so sweete, yet they were the paths to destruction; that their lookes were stales vnto death, and the foldes of their handes are fetters to snare men in sinne. Now hee sawe that pride was extreame folly, for such as lookt most high against the Sunne grew soonest blinde: that *Icarus* caught / his fall, by foring high: that time ill spent in vanitie, in ryotous companie, amongst a crew of carelesse Caualiers, that would boast it in the towne, not braue in the field: was neither to bee recalled nor recompent. Oh *Francesco* (quoth hee) how fond hast thou beene lead away with euery looke, fed vppon with Trencher flies, eaten aliue with flatterers, giuen to look at a Goddesse more than thy God, more readie to a Bowle than thy Booke, squaring in the strectes when thou shouldest bee meditating in thy chamber. If thou knowest these to be extreame parts of follie, repent and amend:



The Deare knowing Tamarisk is deadly to his nature, scornes to come near the tree. The Vnicorne will not brook to rest vnder a Cytron tree, for that hee holdes it mortall: The Elephant will flie out of the companie of a murtherer. These brute beafts auoide what nature tells them is perilous: thou huntest after those harmes with greedinesse, that thou knowest are preiudiciall.

Well *Francesco*, then now or else neuer, away with such follies; stoppe at the bottom, and then it is *Sero*, yet let it bee *Serio*: home to thy wife of thy youth, reconcile thy selfe to her, she will forgiue and forget thy former fondnesse, and entertaine her penitent paramour, with as great kindnesse as he comes home with penaunce: What man, *Nunquam sera est ad bonos mores via*. With that *Francesco* tooke pen and paper, and wrote this Sonnet.

*Francescoes Sonnet, made in the prime  
of his penaunce.*

*With sweating browes I long haue plowde the sands  
My seede was youth, my croppe was endlesse care:  
Repent hath sent me home with emptie hands  
At last, to tell how rife our follies are: |  
And time hath left experience to approue:  
The gaine is grieffe to those that traffique loue.*

*The silent thought of my repentant yeeres  
 That fill my head, haue cald me home at last :  
 Now loue vnmasht a wanton wretch apeares :  
 Begot by guilefull thought with ouer hast.  
 In prime of youth a rose, in age a weede,  
 That for a minutes ioye payes endlesse neede.*

*Dead to delights, a foe to fond conceipt,  
 Allied to wit by want, and sorrow bought :  
 Farewell fond youth, long fostred in deceipt :  
 Forgiue me Time disguisde in idle thought.  
 And Loue adew, loe hasting to mine ende ;  
 I finde no time too late for to amend.*

H Auing framed this sonet, he gaue the cobby to some of his friends: making manifest to them his resolution to leaue *Troynouant*, and to go home, and by their help who furnished him with such necessaries as he did want, he in short time tooke his iourney. The day of his departure was ioyfull to all his friends, infomuch that as many as knew of his Iurney, gathered themselues together, and made him a banquet ; where (verie merie and pleasant) they karouft to the health of his *Isabel*: One amongst the rest who loued *Francesco* so tenderlie, tooke a cuppe of wine in his hand, & with teares in his eies, said thus: *Francesco*, I haue nothing to giue thee, being my selfe pinched with want: but some preceptes of witte that I haue

bought with much experience, those shalt thou haue at my handes, which if thou put in practife, think I haue giuen much treasure.

*The farewell of a friend.*

- 1 *Let gods worship be thy mornings work,  
and his wisdome the direction of thy daies  
labour. |*
- 2 *Rise not without thankes, nor sleepe not without  
repentance.*
- 3 *Chooſe but a fewe friends and trie thoſe ; for the  
flatterer ſpeaks faireſt.*
- 4 *If thy wife be wiſe make her thy Secretarie, elſe  
locke thy thoughts in thy heart, for women are  
ſildome ſilent.*
- 5 *If ſhe be faire, bee not iealous ; for ſuſpition cures  
not womens follies.*
- 6 *If ſhe be wiſe wrong her not : for if thou loueſt  
others ſhe will loath thee.*
- 7 *Let thy childrens nourtire be their richeſt  
portion : for wiſedome is more precious than  
wealth.*
- 8 *Be not proude amongſt thy poore neighbours : for  
a poore mans hate is perilous.*
- 9 *Nor too familiar with great men : for preſumption  
wins diſdaine.*
- 10 *Neither bee too prodigall in thy fare, nor die not  
indebted to thy bellie, but enough is a feaſt.*

11 *Bee not enuious, leaft thou fall in thine owne thoughts.*

12 *Vfe patience, mirth and quiet : for care is enemie to health.*

And *Francesco* (quoth his friend) that thou maift remember my precepts I drinke to thée. Vpon this he pledged him, and fo in pleafant chat they paff away the time till breakfast was done, and then he gat him to horfe, and then brought him a mile out of the Citie. At laft, although they playd loth to depart, yet *Francesco* muft away; but before he departed, when they were readie to fhake hands, he puld out of his fléue a Sonnet that he had made and gaue them it. The effects were thefe. /

*Francescos Sonnet cald his  
parting blow.*

*Reason that long in prifon of my will  
Hafte wept thy miftris wants and loffe of time :  
Thy wonted fiege of honour fafely clime,  
To thee I yeeld as guiltie of mine ill.*

*So (fettered in their teares) mine eyes are preft  
To pay due homage to their natiue guide,  
My wretched heart wounded with bad betide,  
To craue his peace from reason, is adreff.*

*My thoughts aſhamd ſince by themſelues conſumd,  
 Hauē done their duetie to repentant wit :  
 Aſhamde of all ſweete guide I ſorie fit,  
 To ſee in youth how I too farre preſumde.*

*Thus he whom loue and errour did betray,  
 Subſcribes to thee, and takes the better way.*

*Sero ſed ſerio.*

Asſoone as hee had deliuered them the Sonnet, ſhaking hands, he put ſpurre to his horſe and roade onward on his iourney: within fūe daies hee arriued at *Caerbrancke*, where aſſoone as he was lighted he went to the houſe where his wife foiourned, and one of the maides eſpying *Franceſco*, yet knewe him for all his long abſence, and ranne in and tolde it to *Iſabel* that her huſband was at the doore: ſhe being at worke in her chamber, ſat at this newes as one in an extaſie; vntill *Franceſco* came vp, who at the firſt ſight of his wife, conſidering the excellencie of her beautie, her vertues, chaſtitie, and other perfectiones, and meaſuring her conſtancie with his diſloyaltie, ſtoode as a man metamorphoſed: at laſt he began thus.

Ah *Iſabel*, what ſhal I ſay to thy fortunes or my follies? what exordium ſhall I uſe to ſhewe my penance, or diſcouer my ſorrowes, or expreſſe my preſent ioyes? For I tell thee I conceiue as great

pleafure to fee thee well, as grieffe in that I haue wronged thee with my abfence. Might fighes, (*Ifabel*) teares, plaints, or any fuch exterior paffions pourtray out my inward repentance, I would fhew thee the Anatomie of a moft diftressed man : but amongft many forrowing thoughts there is fuch a confufion, that superfluitie of griefes ftops the fource of my difcontent. To figure out my follies or the extremitie of my fancies, were but to manifefte the bad courfe of my life ; and to rubbe the fcarre by fetting out mine owne fcathe : and therefore let it fuffice, I repent heartelie, I forrowe deeplie, and meane to amend and continue in the fame constantlie. At this *Francesco* ftoode and wept, which *Ifabel* feeing, conceiued by his outward griefes his fecret paffions, and therefore taking him about the necke, wetting his cheekes with the teares that fell from her eyes, ſhe made him this womanlie, and wife anfwere.

What *Francesco* comefte thou home ful of woes, or ſeekeſt thou at thy returne to make me weepe? Haft thou been long abfent, and now bringeſt thou me a treatiſe of difcontent? I ſee thou art penitent, and therefore I like not to heare what follies are paſt. It fufficeth for *Ifabel* that henceforth thou wilt loue *Ifabel*, and vpon that condition without any more wordes welcome to *Ifabel*. With that ſhe ſmiled and wept, and in doing both

together sealed vp all her contrarie passions in a kisse. Many lookes past betweene them, many odde fancies and many fauours: but what they did, or how they agreed in secrete that I cannot tell, but fourth they came great friends out of the chamber, where *Francesco* was welcomed home of his wifes host with great cheare: who to shewe his kindnesse the more, had prouided a sollemne banquet, hauing bidden many of his neighbours to supper, that they might accompanie *Francesco*. /

Well, supper being done and they fitting by the fire, the host seeing them all in a dumpe, sayd, that to driue them out of their melancholie he would tell them a tale, which they al desirous of, sat silent, and he began thus.

*The Hosts tale.*

**I**N *Theffalie*, where Nature hath made the soyle proude with the beautie of Shepherds, there dwelled a swayne called *Selador*; ancient, as hauing age feated in his haire: and wealthie, as infeaffed with great possessions; and honest, as being indued with many vertuous qualities. This *Selador* had to ioy him in his age, a daughter of great beautie, so exquisite in her exterior feature, as no blemish might eclipse the glorie that Nature bestowed in her liniaments. As thus she was faire, so was she wife, and with her wit ioyned vertue, that to behold,

ſhe was *Helena* ; to heare, *Pallas* ; and to court, a *Daphne*. This Damofell whoſe name was *Mirimida*, kept her fathers ſhéepe, & in a ſcarlet peticoate, with a chaplet of flowers on her head, went euery day to the fields, where ſhe plide the care of her fathers foldes with ſuch diligence, that ſhe ſeemed with Labour to enter armes againſt Loue, & with her hands thrift to preuent her hearts gréeſe. Vſing thus daylie the playnes of *Theſſalie*, the Shepherds delighted at the gaze of ſo excellent an obieſt, and held their eyes fortunate when they might behold her feature, eſtéeming him happie that could lay his flocks néereſt to her foldes. Amongſt the reſt of all the ſwaynes that fed their thoughts on her fauours, there was one called *Eurymachus*, a young youth that had the pride of his yeares triumphing in his countenance, wittie, and full of pleaſant conceipts, and that Fortune might iumpe with loue, and make him gracious in womens eyes he was wealthie ; for gold is the Chriſocoll of loue. This *Eurymachus* alwaies ſo plotted the courſe of his ſhéepe / walke, that he was next neighbour to *Mirimida*, in ſo much that to diſcouer his fancie hée did her often fauours ; for when any of her Lambes went aſtray, or any thing grewe amiſſe, then *Eurymachus* was the ſwayne that indeuoured by his labour to redreſſe every loſſe. By this meanes hée waxed priuate and familiar with *Mirimida*,



which was the meanes that wrought him into a preiudiciall laborinth; for he did fo neere *accedere ad ignem*, that hée did *calefcere plus quam fatis*: for as none comes néere the fume of the Miffelden but he waxeth blind, nor any touch the Salamander but he is troubled with the palfie; fo none could gaze on the face of *Mirimida* but they went away languifhing. This did poore *Eurymachus* experience: for although he knewe Loues fires were fatall, and did not warme but fcortch; yet he loued with the bird to flie to the flame though he burnt his wings and fell in the bufh; he would not with *Vliffes* ftop his eares, but fit and fing with the Syrens; he feared no inchantment, but carouft with *Circes*, till his ouerdaring drewe him into a paffionate danger, and fo long fuctt in the beautie of *Mirimida* with his euer thirftie eyes, till his hart was fuller of paffions, than his eyes of affections: yet difcouer his thoughts he durft not, but smothered vp his inward paynes with outward filence; hauing the Ouen the hotter within for that it was damd vp, and his gréeses the deeper for that they were concealed. To manifelt his maladie to her he durft not, he thought himfelfe too homely a patient for fuch a Phifition: to vtter his loues to another and make any his Secretarie but himfelfe, he fupposed was to drawe in a riual to his loues. Thus was *Eurymachus* perplexed, till at laft to giue a little vent to

the flame, fitting on a day on a hill, hée puld  
foorth pen and incke, and wrote this fancie. /

*Eurymachus fancie in the prime of  
his affeēion.*

*When lordly Saturne in a sable roabe  
Sat full of frownes and mourning in the West,  
The euening starre scarce peept from out her lodge,  
And Phæbus newly gallopt to his rest :*

*Euen then*

*Did I*

*Within my boate sit in the silent streames,  
All voyd of cares as he that lies and dreames.*

*As Phao so a Ferriman I was,  
The countrie lasses sayd I was too faire :  
With easie toyle I labourd at mine oare,  
To passe from side to side who did repaire :*

*And then*

*Did I*

*For paines take pence, and Charon like transport  
Affoone the fwayne as men of high import.*

*When want of worke did giue me leaue to rest,  
My sport was catching of the wanton fish :  
So did I weare the tedious time away,  
And with my labour mended oft my dish :*

*For why*

*I thought*

*That idle houres were Calenders of ruth,  
And time ill spent was preiudice to youth.*

*I scornd to loue, for were the Nymph as faire  
As she that loued the beauteous Latmian fwayne,  
Her face, her eyes, her tresses, nor her browes  
Like Iuorie could my affection gaine. |*

*For why*

*I said*

*With high disdaine, Loue is a base desire,  
And Cupids flames, why the' are but watrie fire.*

*As thus I sat disdayning of proud loue,  
Haue ouer Ferriman, there cried a boy,  
And with him was a paragon, for hue,  
A louely damosell beauteous and coy,*

*And there*

*With her*

*A maiden, couered with a tawnie vale,  
Her face vnseene for breeding louers bale.*

*I stird my boate, and when I came to shoare  
The boy was wingd, me thought it was a wonder :  
The dame had eyes like lightning, or the flash  
That runnes before the hot report of thunder ;*

*Her smiles  
Were sweete,*

*Louely her face : was neere so faire a creature,  
For earthlie carkasse had a heauenly feature.*

*My friend (quoth she) sweete Ferriman behold,  
We three must passe, but not a farthing fare,  
But I will giue (for I am Queene of loue)  
The brightest lasse thou lik'st vnto thy share :*

*Choose where*

*Thou louest,*

*Be she as faire as Loues sweete Ladie is,  
She shall be thine if that will be thy blisse.*

*With that she smiled with such a pleasing face,  
As might haue made the marble rocke relent :  
But I that triumpht in disdaine of loue,  
Bad fie on him that to fond loue was bent, |*

*And then*

*Said thus,*

*So light the Ferriman for loue doth care,  
As Venus passe not, if she pay no fare.*

*At this a frowne sat on her angrie brow,  
She winkes vpon her wanton sonne hard by :  
He from his quiuer drew a bolt of fire,  
And aynd so right as that he pearst mine eye :*

*And then*

*Did she*

*Draw downe the vale that hid the virgins face,  
Whose heauenly beautie lightned all the place.*

*Straight then I leande mine arme vpon mine oare,  
And lookt vpon the Nymph (if so) was faire :  
Her eyes were starres, and like Apollos locks  
Methought appeared the tramels of her haire.*

*Thus did*

*I gaze*

*And suckt in beautie till that sweete desire  
Cast fuell on and set my thought on fire.*

*When I was lodgd within the net of loue,  
And thus they saw my heart was all on flame,  
The Nymph away, and with her trips along  
The winged boy, and with her goes his dame.*

*Oh then*

*I cried*

*Stay Ladies stay and take not any care,  
You all shall passe and pay no penny fare.*

*Away they fling, and looking coylye backe  
They laugh at me : oh with a loud disdaine.  
I send out sighes to ouertake the Nymphs,  
And teares as lures to call them back againe :*

*But they*

*Flie thence :*

*But I sit in my boate, with hand on oare,  
And feele a paine, but know not whats the sore.*

*At last I feele it is the flame of loue,  
I strive but bootlesse to expresse the paine :  
It cooles, it fires, it hopes, it feares, it frets,  
And stirreth passions throughout euery veine.*

*That downe*

*I sat,*

*And sighing did faire Venus lawes approoue,  
And swore no thing so sweete and sowre as loue.*

*Et florida pungunt.*

Hauing made this Canzon, he put it in his boosome, and oft when he was by himselfe would reade it, easing his passion with viewing the conceits of his owne fancie : on a day hauing brought downe his sheepe he espies *Mirimida*, and to her he goes, and after his wonted salute sat downe by her, and fell to such chat as occasion did minister, intermedling his passion with so many fighes, and fixing his eye so effectually vpon her face without remooue, that she perceiued the Shepheard had swallowed *Aconiton*, and that there was none but she that bore the Antidote. As

thus she noated his passions, she espied a scrole of paper sticking out of his bosome, which she fnatcheth foorth and vnfoldeth, and perceiuing it was a Sonnet she read it, and then looking earnestlie on *Eurymachus* hee blusht: and she with a friendly smile began to crosse him with this frumpe.

What *Eurymachus*, cannot wonted labours wipe away wanton amours, nor thy sheepes care preuent thy hearts loue? I had thought fancie had not troad on thy héele, nor affection presented any obiect to thine eye, but now I see as the Camelion cannot liue without ayre, nor the Salamander without fire: so men haue no quiet in their life, vnlesse / they acquaint them with loue: I see fwaynes are not such fwads but they haue thoughts and passions, and be they neuer so lowe they can looke at beautie. *Corydon* in his gray cassocke had his faire *Phillis*, and *Menalcus* could court *Galatea* in his Shepherds cloake, and *Eurymachus* be he neuer so homely will hazarde: but at whome there lies the question.

At whom (quoth *Eurymachus*) ah *Mirimida*, at one that is too high for my thoughts, and too beauteous for my fortunes: so that as I haue soared with the Hobby, I shall bate with the Bunting; & daring with *Phaeton*, I shall drowne with *Icarus*: mine eye was too proude, my thoughts to forward; I haue stared at a starre, but shall

stumble at a stone, and I feare because I haue ouerlookt in loue, I shal be ouerlaid in loue. With that he sighed, and *Mirimida* smiled and made this replie. Why *Eurymachus*, a man or a mouse? what is there any Cedar so high but the slowest snayle will creepe to the top? any fortune so base but will aspire? any loue so precious but hath his prize? What, *Eurymachus*, a Cat may looke at a King, and a swayne eye hath as high a reach as a Lords looke. *Vulcan* in his leather futes courted *Venus* in her filkes: the swayne of *Latmos* woed *Luna*: both dared, and both had their desires. What? Loue requires not wealth but courage, & parentage is not so high prizd by fancie as personage: feare not man, if thou hast lookt hie, followe thy thoughts, and trie lous fauours, for deniall is no dishonour. *Eurymachus* hearing *Mirimida* in such an amorous humour, encouraged by her perswasions, thought now to strike while the yron was hot, and therefore taking her by the hand began thus.

Trueth *Mirimida*, *Venus* lawes are bounded with constraint, and when loue leadeth the eye, desire kéepes no compasse. When *Paris* courted *Helena*, though she were coy and denied, yet was she not discourteous & disdained; for she answered thus mildly: *Nemo etenim succenset amanti*. This (*Mirimida*) makes me hardie to take thee by the



hand, and / to say I loue *Mirimida* ; for thou art the Sunne that hath eclipsed mine eyes, and thy beautie haue I so long gazed on, that as they which were wounded with *Achilles* Launce, could not be healed but by the same truncheon : so thine excellence hath fettered *Eurymachus*, that thy courtesie must free *Eurymachus*. I confesse I haue lookt too high, but I excuse my presumption by thine owne principles ; and if I haue dared too much, why loue allowes it. Then fayre Nymph, if thou beest as beautifull as *Venus*, yet looke at blacke *Vulcan* ; lowe fortunes haue high desires ; if thou beest as lowly as *Luna*, stoope to *Endymion* ; a swayne may bee as constant as a king ; shepherds loues are loyall, for their eyes are like Emeralds that receiue but one impressiõ, and their hearts like Adamants that will turne no way but to one poynt of the heauen. *Mirimida* frowning at the follie of the Shepheard, cut him off thus.

If thou knewest how bad þy corne is *Eurymachus* (quoth she) thou wouldest not put thy fickle so farre in : and seeing your haruest is like to be so little, spare labour & work not so hard : if you haue lookt at my beautie, your aime is not beyond compasse, your high straines are but frumps, and so I take them ; for he that calls a Faulcon a Phenix, is but a flatterer, and such as tearme their

loues Saints, are thought but to vtter words of courſe. Well, howſoeuer if you loue me I like you, but ſo as *Dianas* fancie was to *Apollo*, to be his friend in the field & his foe in the chamber; to fauour him as hee was a huntsman, but to hate him when hee chatteth of loue: ſo *Eurymachus*, ſo long as thou foldeſt thy flockes with *Mirimida* thou art welcome to *Mirimida*; but if thou caſteth foorth thy lure to haue *Mirimida* loue, then I will leaue thee to thy follie, as one that hates to bée drawne to fancie: for knowe, that as the Oliue tree will brook no touch of ſteel; the Agyte no heate of fire: ſo *Mirimidas* eares are not capable of any amorous perſwaſions, and therefore friend *Eurymachus*, anything but loue: and ſo I leaue you. /

Nay (quoth *Eurymachus*) and hee tooke her faſt by the arme, if I were ſure you had power as *Diana* had to plague me with *Aeteons* puniſhment, you paſſe not without a little more prattle; if I anger you, tis firſt a preparation to a good ſtomacke, for choller is a friend to digeſtion: ſecondly, as the Chriſocoll and the gold by long ſtriuing together growe to bee one mettall; ſo by our falling out we ſhall be better friends: for

*Amantium iræ amoris redintegratio eſt.*

Therefore (faire Miſtris) fit ſtill and graunt ſome

fauour to him that is so pained with fancie : I will loue you though I am poore, and a King can doo but so much : if you thinke my degré be too lowe for so high beautie, thinke of all parts the meane is the merriest, and that the Shepherds gray hath lesse grieffe than the Lordly estates : I knowe women must be coy, because they are women, and they must haue time to be wonne, or else they would be thought to be wantons : therefore whatsoever you say now I holde it not authentically, yet for that I would haue some hope, good *Mirimida* let me see thee laugh. She could not but smile to see the Shepherd so pleasant, and so *Eurymachus* rested content, and from amorous chat they fell to talke of other matters till evening drewe on, and then they folded their sheepe and with a friendly farewell parted.

*Eurymachus* was not alone thus enamoured of the faire *Mirimida*, but all the Shepherds of *Theffalie* writ Poems and Ditties of her beautie, and were futors to her for fauour ; she like *Daphne* held loue in disdain, and yet was courteous to all in any other kinde of conference. Amongst the rest, *Venus* (belike) willing to bee pleasant had wrapt one in the laborinth of loue, called *Mullidor*, a fellowe that was of honest parents, but very poore, and his personage was as if he had been cast in *Esops* mould : his backe like a Lute, and his

face like *Thirfites*, his eyes broad and tawny, his haire harfh and curled like a horfe maine, his lips were of the largeft fife in folio, able to furnifh a Coblers shoppe with clowting leather : the onely good part that he had to grace his vifage was his nofe, and that was conquerour like, as beaked as an Egle : Nature hauing made fo proper a ftripling, thought his inward qualities fhould not blemifh his outward excellence, and therefore to keepe proportion into his great head ſhe put little wit, that he knewe rather his ſhéepe by the marke than the number, for he was neuer no good Arithmetician, and yet he was a proper ſcholler and well feene in Ditties. This ruffling Shepheard amongft the reft, and more than any of the reft was enamoured of *Mirimida*, fo that he would often leaue his ſhéepe at randon to paffe by the fields where ſhe fat, only to feede his eye with her fauours. Well, as fooles haue eyes fo they haue hearts, and thoſe oft harbour fond defires : Loue ſometimes lookes lowe, and will ftumble on a cottage as well as on a pallace : fooles are in extremities not eaſilie to bee perfwaded from their bable, and when they begin to loue, follie whets them on to reſtleſſe thoughts. So fell it out with *Mullidor*, for after he had taſted of the beautie of *Mirimida* he grewe paſſionate, but with great impatience, and waſted away in the deſpaire of

his owne defires, that he was waxen pale and wan: which his olde mother espyed, marueiling to see her sonne so malecontent, for she loued him tenderlie, and thought him the sweetest youth and the braueft young man in all *Theffalie*. The Crowe thinkes her foules the fairest, and the Ape accompts of his young as well featured darlings: so *Callena* (for so was the olde womans name) thought *Mullidor* no lesse, though his eares were greater than an Ass, but held him of a swéete perfonage and a rare wit. Well, the poore olde wife when her sonne came home at night, seeing how ill he lookt, marueiled what should bee the cause of this suddaine change; yet because she would follow y<sup>e</sup> principles of countrie phisick, she thought to passe ouer speaking to him til supper were done, to try what stomack he had. Well, the cloath was laid, and the browne loafe set on the board: *Mullidor* full of passions / fat downe to his pottage and eate off his boale full: the old woman stumbles to the pot againe for a fresh messe. Ah mother (quoth hee with a great sigh) no more broath to night: with that shee clapt her hand on her knee, and swore her boy was not well that hee forfooke his supping, yet hee fell to a peece of bacon that stood on the board, and a tough barley pudding: but he rose before the rest and gat him into a corner, where folding his armes

together he sat thinking on his love. Assoone as the rest of the swaines were vp from the table and turning Crabbes in the fire, she tooke her sonne into the feller, and sitting downe in her chaire began thus.

Sonne *Mullidor*, thy cheekes are leane, and thou lookest like lenton, pale & wanne : I sawe by thy stomacke to night thou art not thine owne man : thou hadst alate (God save thee) a lovely fat paire of cheekes, and now thou lookest like a shotten herring : Tell me *Mullidor*, and feare not to tell me, for thou tellest it to thy mother, what aylest thou? Is it grieffe of bodie or of minde that keepes thee on holidais from frisking it at the footeball? Thou art not as thou wert wont, & therefore say what thou aylest, and thou shalt see old women haue good counsaile.

At these speeches of his mother, *Mullidor* fetcht a great sigh, and with that (being after supper) he brake winde ; which *Callena* hearing, oh sonne (quoth she) tis the Collick that troubles thee ; to bed man, to bed, and wee will haue a warme potled. The Collick mother, no, tis a disease that all the cunning women in the Countrie cannot cure, and strangely it holdes me ; for sometimes it paynes me in the head, somewhiles in mine eyes ; my heart, my heart, oh there mother it playes the diuell in a mortar ; somewhile it is like a frost,

cold ; sometimes as a fire hot : when I should sleepe then it makes me wake ; when I eate it troubles my stomacke ; when I am in companie it makes me figh ; and when I am alone it makes me crie right out, that I can wet one of my newe Lockeram napkins with weeping. It came to me by a great chaunce : for as I lookt on a faire flower, a thing I knowe not what crept in at mine eyes, and ranne round about all my vaynes, and at laft gat into my heart, and there euer fince hath remained, and there mother euer fince fo wrings me, that *Mullidor* muft dye : and with that he fell on weeping.

*Callena* feeing her fonne fhed teares, fell to her hempen apron and wipt her bleared eyes, and at laft demaunded of him if it were not loue. At that question he hung downe his head and fighthed. Ah my fonne (quoth ſhe) now I fee tis loue ; for he is fuch a sneaking fellowe, that if he but leape in at the eyelid and diue downe into the heart, and there refts as cold as a ſtone, yet touch him and he will ſcrike : for tell me *Mullidor*, what is ſhe that thou loueſt and will not loue thee ? If ſhe bee a woman as I am, ſhe cannot but fancie thee ; for mine eye though it bee now olde (and with that vp went her apron and ſhe wipt them cléere) hath been a wanton when it was young, and would haue choſen at the firſt glance the propereſt ſpringall in the Pariſh : and truſt me *Mullidor*, but

bée not proude of it, when I looke on thee I finde thee so louely, that I count her worfe than accurst would not choose thee for her Paramour. With these woordes *Mullidor* began to smile, and troubled his mother ere she had halfe ended her tale on this manner.

Mother, I may rightly compare the Church to a looking glasse; for as man may see himselfe in the one, and there see his proportion: so in the other the wenchs eyes are a testificate; for vpon whome you see all the girles looke, hée for foote and face carries away the bell, and I am sure for these two yeares I neuer come into the Church and was no sooner set, but the wenchs began to winke one on another to looke on mee and laugh. Oh ware mother when a dogge waggés his taile hée loues his master, / and when a woman laughs, for my life she is ouer the head & eares in loue. Then if my fortune serue me to be so well thought on, why should I not venter on her I loue? It is (mother) *Seladors* daughter *Mirimida*. Now Gods blessing on thy heart (quoth *Callena*) for louing such a smugge lassé: marrie her (my sonne) and thou shalt haue my benizon in a clowte. *Mirimida?* marie tis no maruell if thy chéeke are fallen for her: why, she is the fairest blossome in all the towne: to her sonne, to her, tricke thy selfe vp in thy best reparrell, & make no bones at it but on



a woing : for womens defires, I may tell thee boy, are like childrens fancies, won oft with an apple when they refuse an Angell, and *Mullidor* take this with thee and feare not to speede : A womans frowne is not euer an instance of choller : if she refuse thee outwardlie, she regards thee inwardly ; and if she shake thee vp and bid thee be packing, haue the better hope, Cats and Dogs come together by scratching : if she smile, then sonne say to thy selfe, she is thine ; and yet women are wylie cattel, for I haue seene a woman laugh with anger, and kisse him she hath desired to kill : she will be coy (*Mullidor*) but care not for that, tis but a thing of course ; speake thou faire, promise much, praise her highly, commend her beautie aboue all, and her vertue more than all, sigh often, and shewe thy selfe full of passions, and as sure as thy cap is of wooll, the wench is thine.

*Mullidor* hearing his mother giue such good counsaile, sayd he would ieopard a ioynt, and the next day haue a fling at her. With that he sayd his heart was eased, and his stomacke somewhat come downe with her good perswasions : whereupon the Ambrie was opened, and he turned me ouer the cantele of a Chéese and went to bed. The next morning vp he rose, and his holy day roabes went on, his standvppes newe blackt, his cappe faire brusht, and a clean Lockeram band.

Thus attyred, away flings *Mullidor* to the field, and carried away his sheepe & led them into the playnes where *Mirimida* sought to feede her flockes: comming there, he /met her all alone, sitting vnder a Beech Tree, weauing of Nets to catch birds: assoon as *Mullidor* spied her, his heart leapt for ioy; & she seeing him, laught: which was a great help to his courage, that rushing roughly towards her, he sayd thus. Mistris *Mirimida*, here is wether that makes grasse plentie, & sheepe fatte; by my troth there neuer came a more plenteous yeare: & yet I haue one sheepe in my folde thats quite out of liking; & if you knew the cause you would maruell. The other day as hee was grafing, he spied a spotted eaw feeding before him; with that he fell to gaze on her, and that so long, that he wagd his taylor for very ioye: hee came to her, and with a sheepish curtesie courted her: the eaw was coy, and butted him, which strooke him so to the heart, that casting a sheepes eye at hir, away he goes; and euer since he lies by himselfe & pines away: I pray you Mistris *Mirimida* what think you of this Eaw? *Mirimida* perceiuing by his *Simile*, that little witte had oft fancies, & fooles were within the compasse of Loues warrant: whereupon thinking to bring him into a paradise, she made this answere. I am an ill Iudge *Mullidor*, and yet because I am a

shepherdize, and this is a sheepish question; that the Eaw should bee the first that should be fatted in all the flock: and in reuenge of her crueltie, folde to the Butcher. For I tell thee *Mullidor*, shee that is cruell in loue, is like to a Rose, that prickes when it should be gathered. Say you so *Mirimida* (quoth he) then may I be the bolder to break out my minde vnto you: for surely I am the sheepe, that euer since I markt your beautie, haue beene inflamed with your swéete lookes: and not daring boulte out my affection; haue pined away, as you may see by my cheekes; and refuse my foode: and you *Mirimida* are the Eaw that hath so caught *Mullidor* captiue. Therefore now that I vtter howe I loue, and couet that you should loue againe; take heede you refuse not, for if you doe, by my iudgement you shall be sold to the Butcher for your crueltie. *Mirimida* hearing the affe ruffle in his rude eloquence, smiled to her selfe, and thought / that *Venus* fires as well warme the poore as the rich, and that deformitie was no meanes to abridge fancie: wherevpon she replied thus. Why *Mullidor* are you in loue, and with me? is there none but *Mirimida* that can fit your eye, being so many beautifull damzels in *Theffalie*; take heede man, looke before you leap least you fall in the ditch: I am not good enough for so proper a man as your selfe, especially being his mothers

onely fonne : what *Mullidor*, let me counfaile you, there are more maides than Malkin, and the countrey hath fuch choice as may breede your better content: for mine own part at this time I meane not to marry. Tis no matter quoth *Mullidor* what you fay : for my mother tolde me, that maides at firft would bee coy when they were wooed, and mynfe it as twere a mare ouer a mouth full of Thiftles, and yet were not a whit the worfe to be likte, for twas a matter of cuftome. Well then *Mullidor* quoth *Mirimida*, leaue off for this time to talke of loue ; and hope the beft : to morrow perchaunce it will bee better : for women are like vnto children, that will oft refufe an Apple, and ftraight crie for the paring : and when they are moft hungrie, then for fullenneffe faft. This *Mullidor* quoth ſhe, is the frowardneffe of loue : Marie then quoth he, if they haue childrens malladies, twere good to vfe childrens medicines, and thats a rod : for be they neuer fo froward, a ierck or too will make them forward : and if that would bring women to a good temper ; my mother hath a ftiffe cudgell, and I haue a ftrong arme.

Thus thefe two paffed away the day, till prefently they efpied a farre off a Gentleman with a Hauke on his fiſt, to come riding towards them : who drawing nie and feeing fo faire a Nimph, rained his horfe, and ſtoode ſtill, as *Aeteon* when he gazed at

*Diana* : at laſt hee alighted, and comming towards her, ſaluted her thus curteouſly. Faire virgin, when I ſaw ſuch a ſweete Saint with ſuch a crooked Apoſtle, I ſtraight thought *Venus* had been walking abroad to take the ayre with *Vulcan* ; but aſſoone as mine eyes began narrowly to make ſuruey of thy beautie, I found *Venus* blemiſht with thy rare excellencie : happy are theſe ſheepe that are folded by ſuch a parragon ; and happy are theſe ſhepherds that enioy the preſence of ſuch a beauteous creature : no marueile if *Apollo* became a ſwaine, or *Mercury* a Neatheard, when their labours are recompent with ſuch loues. My ſelſe faire damoſell, if either my degree were worthy, or my deſerts any, would craue to haue entertainemēt to become your dutiful ſeruant. Al this while *Mirimida* held downe her head and bluſht. At laſt, lifting vp her eyes full of modeſtie, and her face full of chaſt colours : ſuch as flouriſh out the fronts of *Dianas* virgins : ſhe made the Gentleman this anſwere. My ſeruant ſir (quoth ſhee) no, your worth is far aboue my wealth, and your dignity too high for my degree, poore cuntry Damoſels muſt not ayme too hie at fortune, nor flye too faſt in deſires, leaſt looking at their feete with the Peacock they let fall their plumes, and ſo ſhame at their owne follies : but if my gree were ſo great as to enterteine ſuch ſeruants, I muſt beſtow vpon them ſome changable liuorie, to ſhew

the varietie of their minds ; for mens hearts are like to the Polipe, that will change into all colours but blew, and their thoughtes into all affects but constancie : In that fir, your eye dazled and mistooke me, for *Venus*, you gazde against the sūne, and so blemisht your sight, or els you haue eaten of the rootes of Hemlock, that makes mens eyes conceipt vnseene obiects : howsoeuer (as I take you for a Gentleman) so I take your praise for a frumpe : and so your way lies before you ; we must folde our flocks and you may be gone when you please. In faith quoth he, *Oenone* chose *Paris* for her Pher in her labours, & her fellow in her loues: thinking the sweetest face the best fayring for a gentle-womans eye: But you contrary haue gotte a smoakie *Vulcane* as *Venus*, to set out your excellencie: for as Christfall placed by Ieate, seemes the more pure: so a beauteous Paragon shewes the more fayre, ioyned with a deformed Peasaunt. *Mullidor* hearing the / Gentleman thus abuse his patience, as a man conceipted in his owne propernesse, and especially afore *Mirimida*, thwarted him thus: You master meacock that stand vpon the beauty of your churnmilke face ; as brag with your Buzzard on your fist, as a Sow vnder an apple tree : know that wee countrey swaines as we are not beholding to Nature for beautie, so we little accompt of Fortune for any fauour : Tush man,

my crooke back harboureth more honest conditions, can fetch more pence than thy filkes : for I beleue thou makst a sconce of the Mercers booke : thou hast made such sure entrance there, that thou wilt neuer from thence till thou beeft come out by the eares. Goodman courtier, though we haue backes to beare your frumps; yet we haue queasie stomacks that will hardly brooke them : and therefore fine foole, be gone with your foule, or I wil so belabour you, as you shall feele my fingers this fortnight: And with that *Mullidor* heaued vp his sheephook & bent his browes, so that the Gentleman giuing *Mirimida* the adieu, hee put spurs to his horse, and went his way.

At this manly part of *Mullidor*, *Mirimida* laught heartilie ; and he tooke a great conceipt, that hee had shewd himselfe such a tall man : Vpon this, *Mirimida* gaue him a Nofegay which stuck in her bosome for a fauour ; which hee accepted as gratefully, as though another had giuen him a tunne of golde. Night drew on, and they folded their sheepe and departed, shee to her Father, and hee towards olde *Callena*, as ioyful a man as *Paris*, when he had the promise from *Venus* : hee plodded on his way with his head full of passions, and his heart full of new thoughts, and still his eye was on the Nofegay, in so much that he stoode in a doubt whether it were Loue or some other fury worse than Loue,

that thus hinch him & pinch him : at last he fell with himselfe into this meditation. Now doe I perceiue that Loue is a purgation, and searcheth euery veine : that though it enter at the eye, yet it runnes to the heart, and then it keeps an / olde coyle, where it worketh like a iuglers box. Oh Loue thou art like to a flea which bitest fore, and yet leapest away and art not to be found : or to a pot of strong ale, that maketh a man call his Father whoreson : so both them bewitch a mans wits that he knoweth not a B. from a Battildore. Infortunate *Mullidor*, and therefore infortunate, because thou art ouer the eares in Loue; and with whome? with *Mirimida*: whose eyes are like to sparks of fire, and thine like a pound of butter, like to be melted with her beauty, and to consume with the frieng flame of fancie. Ah *Mullidor* her face is like to a red & white Daisy growing in a greene meddow, & thou like a bee, that comest and suckest honie from it, and cariest it home to thy hiue with a heau & hoe : that is as much to say, as with a head full of woes, & a heart full of sorrowes and maladies. Be of good cheare, *Mirimida* laughes on thee, & thou knowest a womans smile is as good to a louer, as a sunshine day to a Haymaker : she shewes thee kind looks, & casts many a sheeps eye at thee : which signifies that shee counts thee a man worthie to iumpe a match with hir : nay more *Mullidor*,



shee hath giuen thee a Nofegay of flowers wherin as a top gallant for all ſ̄y reſt, is ſet in Roſemary for remembrance : Ah *Mullidor* cheere thy ſelfe, feare not ; loue & fortune fauors luſty lads, cowards are not friends to affection : therefore venter, for thou haſt wonne her : els had ſhe not giuen thee this noſegay. And with this remembering himſelfe, he ſtart vp, left off his amorous paſſions, and trudgeth home to his houſe ; where comming in, olde *Calena* ſtumbles to ſee in what humour hir ſonne came home : frolick he was, & his cap on the one ſide, he aſkt if ſupper were ready : his mother ſeeing his ſtomack was good, thought there was ſome hope of her Sonnes good fortunes, and therefore ſayd there was a pudding in the pot that is almoſt enough : but ſonne, quoth ſhe, what newes ? what ſucceſſe in thy loues ? how doth *Mirimida* like thee ? Ah, ah, quoth *Mullidor*, and he ſmiled, how ſhould I be vſed : but as one that was wrapt in his mothers ſmock when hee was borne. Can the ſunne want heat, and the winter cold : or a proper / man be denied in his ſuites ? No mother, aſſoone as I began to circumglaze her with my Sophiſtrie & to fetch her about with 2 or three venies : fr̄o mine eyes I gaue her ſuch a thūp on the breſt, that ſhe would ſcarce ſay no : I told her my mind & ſo wrapt her in the prodigallitie of my wit that ſhe ſaid an other time ſhoulde : but then wee parted laughing, with

such a sweete smile that it made mee loofe in the haft like a dudgin dagger : ſhe gaue me this noſe-gay for a fauour, which how I eſteemed it geſſe you : thus haue I vſed her in kindneſſe, and ſhe vſed me in curteſie ; & ſo I hope we ſhal make a friendly concluſion. By my troth ſonne quoth ſhe & I hope no leſſe, for I tell you, when maids giue gifts, they meane well ; and a woman if ſhe laugh with a glauncing looke wiſheth it were neither to do nor vndone : ſhe is thine my ſonne feare not : and with that ſhe laid the cloth, and ſet victuals on the borde, where *Mullidor* tried himſelfe ſo tall a trencher man, that his mother perceiued by his drift he would not die for loue. Leauing this paſſionate lubber, to the concept of his loues : let vs returne to the young courtier called *Radagon*, who trotting a ſoft pace vpon his courſer, ſeeing the ſunne now bright and then ouerſhadowed with clouds, began to cōpare the ſtate of the weather fantaſtically to the humor of his *Mirimidas* fancies : ſaying, when *Phæbus* was eclipsed with a vapour, then ſhe lowred : when hee ſhewd his glorie in his brightneſſe, then ſhe ſmiled. Thus hee dallied in an vncoth motion ſo long, that at laſt hee began to feele a fire that fretted to the heart. Ryding thus in a quandarie he entred into the conſideratiō of *Mirimidas* beauty, wherupon frolickly in an extemperat humor he made this ſonnet.



*For Neptune (as he ment the world to drown)  
 Heaude vp his surges to the highest tree,  
 And leagu[e]d with Eol, mard the Seamans glee  
 Beating the Cedars with his billows downe :  
 Thus wroth was hee.*

*My mistris deynes to shew hir sunbright face,  
 The ayre cleard vp, the clouds did fade away :  
 Phœbus was frolick when she did display  
 The gorgeous bewties, that her frunt do grace.  
 So that when shee  
 But walkt abroad, the stormes then fled away :  
 Flora did checker all her treading place,  
 And Neptune calmde the surges with his mace,  
 Diana and hir Nymphs were blithe and gaie,  
 When her they see. |*

*Venus and Mars agreed in a smile :  
 And iealous Iuno ceased now to lowre,  
 Ioue saw her face and sighed in his bowre :  
 Iris and Eol laugh within a while  
 To see this glee :  
 Ah borne was she within a happy howre  
 That makes heauen, earth, & Gods and all, to smile :  
 Such wonders can her beauteous lookes compile  
 To cleare the world from any froward lowre :  
 Ah blest be shee.*

WHEN *Radagon* had framd this fancie, he began with fundrie inseeing thoughts to confider, that she was beautifull & of a bafe countrey breede, where vertue affoone dwelleth, as in high dignities : that her witte was sharp, and nature had done her part, to make her euery way excellent, as wel in exterior perfection, as in inward qualities ; though her fortunes were lowe, yet her defires were modest : & proud she could not be, as being poore : to be peeuish were bootlesse, in that her hope did not aspire : her looks bewraid she was no wanton ; and her blushing, that she was bashfull : euery way she seemed vertuous, as she was beautiful. The confideratiō of this excellencie, so pierced the hart of *Radagon*, that from liking he fel to loue, frō small praifes to great passiōs. Tush quoth he, though wedlock be a thing so doubtful & dangerous to deale withal, as to seek roses amongst thornes, eeles amongst Scorpions : and one pure potion amongst a thousand boxes of confection : yet nature doth establish it as necessary : Law as honest, & reason as profitable. Some *Cynick*, as *Diogenes* will thwart it with a dilemma & say, that for yong men tis too soone, for olde men too late to marry : cōcluding so enigmatically, it were not good to marry at al : other wil say as *Arminius* a ruler of *Carthage* said, who being importunately perfwaded

to marry, answered, no said he, I dare not, for if I chāce vpon one that is wife, she wil be wilful ; if welthy, thē wantō ; if poore, thē peeuish ; if beautiful, thē proud ; if deformed thē loathsom : & the lest of these is able / kil a thousand men. Indeed I cannot denie but oft *sub melle latet venenum*, that beautie without vertue is like a boxe of Iuorie containing some balefull Aconiton, or to a faire shooe that wrings the foote ; such loue as is laid vpon such a foundation is a short pleasure full of payne, and an affection bought with a thousand miseries ; but a woman that is faire and vertuous maketh her husband a ioyfull man ; and whether he be rich or poore, yet alwaies he may haue a ioyfull heart. A woman that is of a filent tongue, shamefast in countenance, sober in behaiour, and honest in condition, adorned with vertuous qualities correspondent, is like a goodly pleasant flower deckt with the colours of all the flowers of the garden : and such a one (quoth he) is *Mirimida*, and therefore though she be poore I will loue her and like her ; and if she wil fancie me I wil make her my wife. And vpon this he resolued to profecute his sute towards her, in so much that assoone as he came home and had rested himself a while, he stept to his standish and wrote her a letter.

*Radagon* was not more pained with this passionate

maladie than poore *Eurymachus*, who could take no rest, although euery day in her presence he fed his eye with y<sup>e</sup> beautie of her face: but as the *Hidaspis* the more he drinks the more thirstie he is, so *Eurymachus* the more he looked the more he loued, as hauing his eye deeply enamoured of the obiect; reueale any more his fute he durst not, because when he began to chat of loue she shakt him off, and either flung away in a rage, or else forst him to fall to other prattle, in so much that he determined to discourse his mind in a letter, which he performed as cunningly as he could & sent it her.

*Mullidor* that asse, rapt out his reasons diuers times to *Mirimida*, until she was weary of the groomes importunate fooleries, and so with a sharpe word or two nipt him on the pate: whereupon asking his mothers counsaile, she perswaded him to write vnto *Mirimida*, although he and a pen were as fitte as an asse and a harpe; yet he bought him paper, and stealing into the Churchyard vnder an Appletree, there in his muses he framed a letter and sent it her. /

Thus had Fortune (meaning to be merrie) appoynted in her secret synod that al these three should vse one meanes to possesse their loues, & brought it so to passe that the thrée letters from these three riualls were deliuered at one instant:

which when *Mirimida* saw, she fat her downe and laught, wondring at the rarenes of the chance y<sup>e</sup> should in a moment bring such a conceipt to passe; at last (for as then shee was leading foorth her shéepe) shee fate her downe, and looking on the superscription saide to her selfe; what Adamants are faire faces that can draw both rich, poore & fooles to lodge in the laborinth of their beauties: at this she fighed, and the first letter she broake open, because he was her first loue, was *Eurymachus*. The contents whereof were these.

*Eurymachus the Shepheard to Mirimida  
the Goddesse of Theffalie.*

WHEN (*Mirimida*) I sit by thy sweet selfe & wonder at thy sight, féeding as the Bee vpon the wealth of thy beauties, the conceipt of thine excellencie driues me into an extasie, that I became dumme with ouer much delight; for Nature sets downe this as an authenticke principle:

*Sensibile sensui suppositum nulla fit sensatio.*

If the flower be put in the nostrill, there is no smell; the colour clapt close to the eye blemisheth the sight: so a loue in prefence of his mistris hath y<sup>e</sup> organs of his speech tied, that he conceales with silence, and sighs out his smothered passions with sorowes. Ah *Mirimida* consider y<sup>e</sup> loue is such a



streame as will either haue his course, or break through the bankes & make a deluge, or els force their hart strings crack with secrecy. Thē *Mirimida*, if I be lauish in my pen, blame me not y am so laden with loue ; if I be bold, attribute it to thy beautie, not my impudencie, & think what I ouer dare in, it growes through the extremitie of loyall affection, which is so déeplly imprinted in my thoughts, as neither time can diminish nor misfortune blemish. I aime not (*Mirimida*) at thy wealth, but at thy vertues ; for the more I consider thy / perfection, y more I grow passionate, & in such an humour, as if thou denie, there is no meanes to cure my maladie but that salue which healeth all incurable fores, & that is death. Therefore (*sweet Mirimida*) consider of my loues & vse me as my loyaltie deserues: let not my pouertie put in any barre, nor the baseness of my birth bee any excuse of thy affection ; weigh my desires, not my degrees, & either send me a speedie plaister to salue my despairing passions, or a corasue to cut off my lingering sorowes, either thy fauour with life, or thy deniall with death, betwéene which I rest in hope till I heare thine answer.

*Thine, who can be no others but thine,  
the Shepheard Eurymachus.*

To the end of this letter (for that he would

runne defcant vpon his wit) he fet downe a Sonnet  
written in the forme of a Madrigale, thus.

*Eurymachus in laudem Mirimidæ.*

*his Motto*

*Inuita fortuna dedi vota concordia.*

*When Flora proude in pompe of all her flowers*

*Sat bright and gay,*

*And gloried in the deaw of Iris showers,*

*And did display*

*Her mantle checquered all with gawdy greene :*

*Then I*

*Alone*

*A mournfull man in Erecine was seene.*

*With folded armes I trampled through the grasse,*

*Tracing as he*

*That held the Throane of Fortune brittle glasse,*

*And loue to be*

*Like Fortune fleeting, as the restlesse wind*

*Mixed*

*With mists,*

*Whose dampe doth make the cleereſt eyes grow blind. |*

*Thus in a maze I ſpied a hideous flame :*

*I caſt my ſight,*

*And ſawe where blythly bathing in the ſame :*

*With great delight,*

*A worme did lye, wrapt in a smokie sweate :  
 And yet  
 Twas strange  
 It carelesse lay and shrunke not at the heate.*

*I stood amazed and wondring at the sight,  
 While that a dame  
 That shone like to the heauens rich sparkling light,  
 Discourst the same :  
 And sayd, my friend this worme within the fire  
 Which lies  
 Content,  
 Is Venus worme, and represents desire.*

*A Salamander is this princely beast,  
 Deckt with a crowne,  
 Giuen him by Cupid, as a gorgeous crest  
 Gainst fortunes frowne :  
 Content he lies and bathes him in the flame,  
 And goes  
 Not forth :  
 For why he cannot liue without the same.*

*As he : so louers lie within the fire  
 Of feruent loue,  
 And shrinke not from the flame of hot desire,  
 Nor will not mooue*

*From any heate, that Venus force imparts :*

*But lie*

*Content*

*Within a fire, and waſt away their harts. |*

*Vp flew the dame and vaniſht in a cloude,*

*But there ſtood I,*

*And many thoughts within my mind did ſhrowde*

*Of loue : for why,*

*I felt within my heart a ſcortching fire,*

*And yet*

*As did*

*The Salamander, twas my whole deſire.*

*Mirimida* hauing read this Sonnet, ſhe ſtraight (being of a pregnant wit) conceipted the drift of his Madrigale, ſmiled and layd it by, and then next tooke vp *Radagons* letter, which was written to this effect.

*Radagon of Theſſalie to the faire Shep-  
herdize Mirimida health.*

I Cannot tell (faire Miſtris) whether I ſhould praiſe Fortune as a friend, or curſe her as a foe, hauing at vnwares preſented me with the view of your perfection, which ſight may be either the funne of my bliſſe, or the beginning of my bale : for in you reſts the ballance either to weigh me

downe my due with courtesie, or my deniall with extreame vnkindnes. Such as are prickt with the boanes of the Dolphin, heare musicke, and they are presently healed of their maladie: they which are enuened with the Viper, rubbe the sore with Rubarb and feele a remedie; and those which drinke Aconiton are cured by Antidotes. But loue is like the sting of a Scorpion, it must be salued by affection; for neither charme, hearbe, stone, nor mynerall hath vertue to cure it: which made *Apollo* exclaime this passion.

*Hei mihi quod nullis amor est medicabilis herbis.*

With the same distresse (swéete *Mirimida*) am I pained, who lighting by chance as *Paris* did in the vale of *Ida* vpon *Venus*, haue seene a brighter Dame than *Venus*; but I feare me lesse courteous than *Venus*. I haue no golden / apple (faire Nymph) to present thee with, so to prooue thée supreme of beautie; but the deuotion of my thoughts is offered humblie at thy feete, which shall euer confesse none so beauteous as *Mirimida*. Then as *Venus* for reward gaue *Paris Helena*, so courteous Nymph bee prodigall of thy fauours and giue me thy heart, which shall bee to me more deare than a hundred *Helens*.

But here perhaps thou wilt obiect that mens pleas are the Painters pensels, which drawe no

substance but shadowes, that to the worst proportions giue the richest colours, and to the courtest pictures the finest glasses, that what wee write is of course, and when wee faine passions, then are wee least passionate, hauing sorrowfull pens when wee haue secure hearts, and luring lookes when wee haue laughing thoughts. I cannot denie (swéete Mistris) but that hot loues are like a bauins blaze, and that men can promise more in a moment than they will performe in a moneth. I knowe there was a *Demaphon* that deceiued *Phillis*, an *Aeneas* that falsified his faith to *Dido*, a *Thefeus* that forooke his *Ariadne* : yet measure not all by some mens minds ; of a fewe particular instances, conclude not generall axiomes ; though some haue been fleeting, thinke not all to be false ; trie me, I referre your passions to my prooffe, and as you finde me loyall so reward me with loue. I craue no authenticall graunt, but a superficiall fauour : say (*Mirimida*) that *Radagon* shall bee welcome if he bee faithfull, and then my hope shall comfort my heart. In which suspence I rest confused, at the barre of your courtesie. Farewell.

*Mirimidas Radagon, though she will not  
be Radagons Mirimida.*

This she read ouer twise and blusht at it, as feeling a little heate, but straight she fighed and

shakt it from her heart, and had laid it by, but that turning ouer the next / page she espied certaine verses, which was a Canzon pend thus.

*Radagon in Dianem.*

*Non fuga Teucrus amat: quæ tamen odit habet.*

*It was a valley gawdie greene,  
Where Dian at the fount was seene:  
Greene it was,  
And did passe  
All other of Dianas bowers,  
In the pride of Floras flowers.*

*A fount it was that no Sunne sees,  
Circled in with Cipres trees,  
Set so nie,  
As Phæbus eye  
Could not doo the Virgins scathe,  
To see them naked when they bathe.*

*She sat there all in white,  
Colour fitting her delite:  
Virgins so  
Ought to go:  
For white in Armorie is plast  
To be the colour that is chaff.*

*Her tafta Caffocke might you see  
 Tucked vp aboue her knee,  
     Which did show  
     There below  
 Legges as white as whales bone:  
 So white and chafte was neuer none.*

*Hard by her vpon the ground,  
 Sat her Virgins in a round |  
     Bathing their  
     Golden haire,  
 And finging all in notes hye,  
 Fie on Venus flattring eye.*

*Fie on loue, it is a toy,  
 Cupid witleffe and a boy,  
     All his fires  
     And defires  
 Are plagues that God sent downe from hie,  
 To pester men with miserie.*

*As thus the Virgins did difdaine  
 Louers ioy and louers paine,  
     Cupid nie  
     Did efpie,  
 Greeuing at Dianas fong,  
 S'ylie stole thefe maides among.*



*His bow of steele, darts of fire,  
 He shot amongst them sweete desire,  
     Which straight flies  
     In their eyes.  
 And at the entrance made them start,  
 For it ran from eye to hart.*

*Calisto straight supposed Ioue  
 Was faire and frolicke for to loue :  
     Dian shee  
     Scapt not free :  
 For well I wot hereupon  
 She loued the fwayne Endimion.*

*Clitia Phæbus, and Cloris eye  
 Thought none so faire as Mercurie : |  
     Venus thus  
     Did discusse  
 By her sonne in darts of fire,  
 None so chaste to checke desire.*

*Dian rose with all her maids,  
 Blushing thus at loues braids :  
     With sighs all  
     Shew their thrall.  
 And finging hence pronounce this saw,  
 What so strong as Loues sweete law?*

*Mirimida* hauing read the letter of *Radagon*, perceiued that loue was in his eyes, and perhaps had flylie toucht his heart: but she that was charie of her choyce, and resolute not to fetter her selfe with fancie, did passe ouer these passions, as men doo the shadowes of a painters pensell, which while they view they praise, and when they haue praised, passe ouer without any more remembrance: yet she could not but enter into the humorous reach of his conceipt, how hee checkt the coy disdaine of women in his Sonnet: she blusht, and her thoughts went away with her bloud, and so she lighted on the letter that *Mullidor* had sent her, which droue her into a pleasant vaine. The effects of his passions were these.

*Mullidor the ma'content, with his pen clapt  
full of loue, to his Mistris Miri-  
mida greeting.*

AFTER my heartie Commendations remembred, hoping you be in as good health as I was at the making hereof. This is to certifie you, that loue may well bee compared to a bottle of hay, which once set on fire wil neuer be quenched, or to a cup full of strong ale, which when a man hath once tasted, he neuer leaues till he hath drunke it all vp: so Mi- / stris *Mirimida*, after the furious flames of your two eyes had set my poore heart on the coales of loue, I was so scorched on the

grediron of affection, that I had no rest till I was almost turned to a coale, and after I had tasted of the liquour of your sweete phisnomie, I neuer left sipping of your amiable countenance, till with loue I am almost readie to burst. Consider with your selfe faire Shepheardize, that poore men feele paine as well as Princes ; that *Mullidor* is sicke of such a malladie, as by no meanes can be cured, vnlesse your selfe lay a searecloth to draw away my forrowes : then be pitifull to me leaft you bee counted disdainful, to put so trustie a louer out of his right wits ; for theres no ho but either I must haue you, or els for very plaine loue runne mad. It may be (*Mirimida*) you thinke me too base for your beautie : why ? when you haue married me I am content to serue you as a man, and to doo al those indeuours that belongs to a seruant, and rather to holde you for my Mistris than my wife. Then seeing you shall haue the soueraintie at my hands, which is the thing that all women desire, loue me sweete *Mirimida*, and thinke this, if you match with mee, olde *Callena* my mother hath that in a clowte that will doo vs both good. Thus hoping you wil ponder my passions in your minde, and be more courteous than to cast away a young man for loue. Farewell.

*Yours halfe mad because he would bee  
yours, Mullidor the malecontent.*

Such a poetical furie tooke *Mullidor* in the  
braines, that he thought to shewe his vaine in  
verse, and therefore annexed to his letter this  
pleafant Dittie. /

*Mullidors Madrigale.*

*Dildido dildido,  
Oh loue, oh loue,  
I feele thy rage romble below and aboue.*

*In sommer time I sawe a face,  
Trope belle pour moy helas helas,  
Like to a stoand horse was her pace :  
Was euer yong man so dismaid.  
Her eyes like waxe torches did make me afraid,  
Trop belle pour moy voila mon trespas.*

*Thy beautie (my Loue) exceedeth supposes,  
Thy haire is a nettle for the nicest roses,  
Mon dieu aide moy,  
That I with the primrose of my fresh wit,  
May tumble her tyrannie vnder my feete  
He donque ie fera vn ieune roy.  
Trope belle pour moy helas helas,  
Trope belle pour moy voyla mon trespas.*

*Mirimida* hauing read this humorous fancie of  
*Mullidor*, began thus to meditate with her selfe.

Listen not fond wench to loue, for if thou doest thou learneſt to looſe, thou ſhalt finde grieſe to bee the gaine, and foillie the paymiſtris that rewards all amorous traueſſes. If thou wed thy ſelſe to *Radagon*, thou aimeſt beyond thy reach; and looking higher than thy fortunes, thou wilt repent thy deſires; for *Mirimida* affects beyond compaſſe, haue ofttime infortunate effects; rich robes haue not euer ſweete content, and therefore the meane is the merrieſt honour. What then, muſt *Eurymachus* of all theſe three bee the man that muſt make vp the match; he is a ſhepherd and harbours quiet in his cottage, his wiſhes are not aboute his wealth, nor doth his conceit climbe higher than his deſerts. He hath ſufficiēt / to ſthrowde thée from want, and to maintaine the ſtate of an honeſt life. Shepherds wrong not their wiues with ſuſpition, nor doo cuntry Swaynes eſtéeme leſſe of their loues than higher degrees. But *Mirimida*, meane men haue frownes as well as kings; the leaſt haire hath his ſhadow, the Flye her ſpléene, the Ant her gall, and the pooreſt Peaſant his choller. Peaſants can weld a cudgell better than a great Lord, and diſſention will haue a ſting amongſt the meaneſt. If therefore mariage muſt haue her inconuenience, better golden gyues than yron fetters. What ſaiest thou then to *Mullidor*? that he is *Mullidor*, and let

that suffice to shake him off for a foole; for it were thy discredite to haue onely a woodcock to keepe the wolfe from the doore. Why then, meanest thou not to loue? No fond lasse if thou bee wise; for what is sweeter than libertie? and what burthen heauier than the fist of a froward husband. Amongst many Scorpions thou lookest for one Eele; and amongst a hedge full of nettles for one flower; amongst a thousand flatterers for one that is faithfull; & yet when thou hast him, thy thoughts are at his will, and thy actions are limited to his humours. Beware *Mirimida*, strike not at a stale because it is painted; though honey be sweete Bées haue stings; there is no swéeter life than chastitie, for in that estate thou shalt liue commended and vncontrold.

Vpon this she put vp the letters, and because she would not leade her Louers into a laborinth of hope, she appoynted them all to meete her at the Shéepfolds on one day and at one houre, where the Woers that stood vpon thornes to heare her censure met without faile. After salutes past between *Mirimida* and them, she began to parley with them thus.

Gentlemen, all riuals in loue and aimers at one fortune, though you three affect like desire to haue *Mirimidas* fauour, yet but one of you can weare the flower, and perhaps none, for it is as my fancie

cenſures : therefore are you content that I ſhall ſet downe which of you, or whether none of / you ſhall enjoy the ende of your ſutes, and who ſo is forſaken, to part hence with patience and neuer more to talke of his paſſions. To this they all agréed, and ſhe made this anſwere. Why then *Radagon* and *Eurymachus* weare you two the Willowe Garland, not that I hold either your degrees or deferts worthleſſe of a fairer than *Mirimida* : but that the deſtinies doo ſo appoynt to my deſires, that your affects cannot worke in me any effects. At this, *Radagon* and *Eurymachus* frowned, not ſo much that they were forſaken, but that ſo beautifull a creature would wed her ſelfe to ſuch a deformed aſſe as *Mullidor*, and the foole he ſimpered it in hope to haue the wench. Now (quoth ſhe) *Mullidor* may hope to bee the man : but truſt me as I found him I leaue him, a dolt in his loues, and a foole in his fortunes. At this they laught, and he hung the head, and ſhe left them all. *Radagon* taking his hawke to goe ſlie the Partridge : *Eurymachus* marching with his ſhéephooke to the folds ; *Mullidor* hying home to his mother to recount his miſhaps, and *Mirimida* ſinging that there was no Goddeſſe to *Diana*, no life to libertie, nor no loue to chaſtitie.

*Franceſco*, *Iſabel*, and all the reſt of the gueſts applauded this diſcourſe of the pleaſant Hoſt : and

for that it was late in the night they all rose, and taking their leaue of *Francesco* departed, he and his wife bidding their Host good night, and so going to bed, where wee leaue them to leade the rest of their liues in quiet.

Thus (quoth the Palmer) you haue heard the discouerie of youths follies, and a true discourse of a Gentlemans fortunes.

But now courteous Palmer (quoth the Gentleman) it rests that we craue by your owne promise the reason of your pilgrimage to *Venice*. That (quoth the Palmer) is discourst in a word: for knowe fir, that enioyning my selfe to penance for the follies of my youths passions hauing liued in loue, and therefore reapt all my losse by loue; hearing that of all the Cities in *Europe*, *Venice* hath most semblance of *Ve / nus* vanities. I goe thether not onely to see fashions, but to quip at follies, that I may drawe others from that harme that hath brought me to this hazard. The Gentlewomen of *Venice*, your neighbours, but vnknown to me, haue more fauours in their faces than vertue in their thoughts; and their beauties are more curious than their qualities be precious, caring more to be figured out with *Helen*, than to bee famozed with *Lucrece*; they striue to make their faces gorgeous, but neuer seeke to fit their minds to their God, and couet to haue more knowledge



in loue than in religion: their eyes bewray their wantonneffe, not their modestie; & their lookes are lures that reclaime not Hawkes, but make them onely bate at dead ftales: As the Gentlewomen fo are the men, loofe liuers and ftraight louers, fuch as hold their confcience in their purfes and their thoughts in their eyes, coũting that houre ill fpent that in fancie is not mifpent. Befcaufe therefore this great Citie of *Venice* is holden Loues Paradize, thether doo I direct my pilgrimage, that feeing their paffions, I may being a palmer, win them to penance, by fhewing the miferies that *Venus* mixeth with her momentarie contents: if not, yet I fhall carrie home to my countrimen falues to cure their fores; I fhall fee much, heare little, and by the infight into other mens extreames, returne both the more warie and the more wife. What I fee at *Venice* (fir) and what I note there, when I returne back, I meane to vifite you and make you priuie to all.


The heedfull Hofl hauing iudiciallie vnderftoode the pitifull report of the palmer, giuing truce to his paffions with the teares he fpent, and refolued to requite that thankfullie which he had attended heedfullie, gaue this *Cataftrophe* to his fad and forrowfull difcourfe. Palmer, thou haft with the Kiftrell forefhewed the ftorme ere it comes, painting out the fhapes of loue as liuely, as the Grapes in

*Zeuxis* Tables were pourtraied cunningly; thou hast lent youth *Egle* eyes to behold the Sunne; *Achilles* sword to cut and recure, leauing those medicines to salue others, that hath / lost thy selfe, and hauing burnt thy wings with the flye by dallying too long with the fire, thou hast bequeathed others a lesson with the Vnicorne to preuent poyson by preferues before thou tast with the lippe. The onely request I make in requitall of my attention, is, that thou leaue certaine testimonies on these walles, whereon whensoever I looke, I shall remember *Francescos* follies and thy foresight.


The Palmer esteeming the courteous replie of his host, and desirous to satisfie his request, drawing bloud from the vaine *Cephalia*, (on an arch of white Iuorie erected at the end of an Arbour, adorned with Honyfuckles and Roses) he wrote thus with a pencell.

*In greener yeares when as my greedie thoughts  
 Gan yeeld their homage to ambitious will,  
 My feeble wit that then preuailed noughts,  
 Perforce presented homage to his ill:  
 And I in follies bonds fulfilled with crime,  
 At last vnloosd: thus spide my losse of time.  
 As in his circuler and ceaseles ray  
 The yeare begins, and in it selfe returnes*

*Refresh't by presence of the eye of day,  
That sometimes nie and sometimes farre sojournes:  
So loue in me (conspiring my decay)  
With endles fire my heedles bosome burnes,  
And from the end of my aspiring sinne,  
My paths of error houely doth begin. |*

 Aries.

*When in the Ram the Sunne renewes his beames,  
Beholding mournfull earth araid in grieffe,  
That waights reliefe from his refreshing gleames,  
The tender flockes reioycing their reliefe  
Doo leape for ioy and lap the siluer streames.  
So at my prime when youth in me was chiefe,  
All Heifer like with wanton horne I playd,  
And by my will my wit to loue betrayd.*

 Taurus.

*When Phæbus with Europas bearer lides,  
The Spring appeares, impatient of delaies:  
The labourer to the fields his plow swaynes guides,  
He sowes, he plants, he builds at all assaies.  
When prime of yeares that many errors hides,  
By fancies force did trace vngodly waies,  
I blindfold walkt disdayning to behold,  
That life doth vade, and yong men must be old.*

## ♊ Gemini.

*When in the hold whereas the Twins doo rest,  
Proud Phlægon breathing fire doth post amaine:  
The trees with leaues, the earth with flowers is  
drest:*

*When I in pride of yeres with peeuish braine  
Presum'd too farre and made fond loue my guest;  
With frosts of care my flowers were nipt amaine.  
In height of weale who beares a careles hart,  
Repents too late his ouer foolish part. |*

## ♋ Cancer.

*When in Æstiuall Cancers gloomie bower,  
The greater glorie of the heauens dooth shine;  
The aire is calme, the birds at euerie flowre  
To tempt the heauens with harmonie diuine.  
When I was first inthrald in Cupids powre,  
In vaine I spent the May-month of my time,  
Singing for ioy to see me captiue, thrall  
To him, whose gaines are grieffe, whose cōfort smal.*

## ♌ Leo.

*When in the height of his Meridian walke  
The Lions holde conteines the eye of day:  
The riping corne growes yeolow in the stalke,  
When strength of yeares did blesse me euerie way.*

*Maskt with delights of follie was my talke,  
 Youth ripened all my thoughts to my decay :  
 In lust I sowde, my fruite was losse of time ;  
 My hopes were proud, and yet my bodie slime.*

♄ Virgo.


*When in the Virgins lap earths comfort sleepes,  
 Bating the furie of his burning eyes,  
 Both corne and frutes are firmd, & cōfort creepes  
 On euerie plant and flowre that springing rise :  
 When age at last his chiefe dominion keepes,  
 And leades me on to see my vanities ;  
 What loue and scant foresight did make me sowe  
 In youthfull yeares, is ripened now in woe. |*

♎ Libra.


*When in the Ballance Daphnes Lemman blins  
 The Ploughman gathers frute for passed paine :  
 When I at last considered on my sinnes,  
 And thought vpon my youth and follies vaine ;  
 I cast my count, and reason now begins  
 To guide mine eyes with iudgement, bought with  
 paine,  
 Which weeping wish a better way to finde,  
 Or els for euer to the world be blinde.*

 Scorpio.

*When with the Scorpion proud Apollo plaies,  
 The wines are trode and carried to their press,  
 The woods are feld gainst winters sharp affraies :  
 When grauer yeares my iudgments did adresse,  
 I gan repaire my ruines and decaies :  
 Exchanging will to wit and soothfastnesse :  
 Claiming from Time and Age no good but this,  
 To see my sinne, and sorrow for my misse.*


 Sagittarius.

*When as the Archer in his Winter holde  
 The Delian Harper tunes his wonted loue,  
 The ploughman sowes and tills his labored molde ;  
 When with aduise and iudgement I approue,  
 How Loue in youth hath grieffe for gladnes folde,  
 The feedes of shame I from my heart remooue,  
 And in their steads I set downe plants of Grace  
 And with repent bewailde my youthfull race. |*


 Capricornus.

*When he that in Eurotas siluer glide  
 Doth baine his tresse, beholdeth Capricorne,  
 The daies growes short, then hast the winter tide.  
 The Sun with sparing lights doth seem to mourn,  
 Gray is the green, the flowers their beautie hides :  
 When as I see that I to death was borne,*

*My strength decaide, my graue alreadie drest,  
I count my life my losse, my death my best.*

 Aquarius.

*When with Aquarius Phœbes brother staies,  
The blythe and wanton windes are whist & still,  
Colds frost and snow the pride of earth betraies:  
When age my head with hoarie haire doth fill,  
Reason sits downe, and bids mee count my dayes,  
And pray for peace, and blame my froward will:  
In depth of grieffe in this distresse I crie,  
Peccauī Domine, miserere mei. /*

 Pisces.

*When in the Fishes mansion Phœbus dwells,  
The dayes renew, the earth regaines his rest:  
When olde in yeares, my want my death foretells:  
My thoghts & praier to heauē are whole addest,  
Repentance youth by follie quite expells,  
I long to be dissolued for my best,  
That yong in zeale, long beaten with my rod,  
I may grow old to wisedome & to God.*

The palmer had no sooner finished his circle, but the Host ouer read his concept, and wondering at the excellencie of his wit, from his experience began to suck much wisedome, & being verie loath to detaine his gueft too long: after they had

broken their fast, and the goodman of the house courteously had giuen him thanks for his fauor, the Palmer fet forward towards *Venice* : what there he did, or howe hee liued, when I am aduertised (good Gentlemen) I will fend you tidings. Meane while let euerie one learne (by *Francescoes* fall) to beware, leaft at laft (too late) they be enforced to bewaile.

FINIS.





NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.



## I. NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

\* \* \* See general explanatory remarks prefixed to Notes and Illustrations in Vol. II., pp. 301-2.

---

### NEUER TOO LATE.

- Title-page, l. 7, '*ouer-reaching conceits*' = conceits, too much love-passion, albeit used somewhat vaguely: l. 9, '*Decyphering*'—see Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*, for various prior examples: l. 15, '*pumice stone*' = the volcanic, etc., spuma or ash—still used to erase scratches on copper, and to remove stains on hands, etc.: l. 16, '*race*' = raze: l. 22, '*N. L.*' = Nathanael Ling.
- Page 5, '*Thomas Burnaby*'—see Index of Names after Glossarial-Index, as before: l. 18, '*party*' = person, *ut frequenter*, and not to be noted again except in Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*
- „ 6, l. 8, '*vouch*' = vouchsafe, as onward: l. 13, '*artificially*' = (Latinize) workman-like: l. 17, '*Bacan leafe*'—not known to the Editor. Could it be an error for 'Baccal,'

a kind of laurel mentioned by Pliny? He elsewhere speaks of a decoction of the laurel leaf, applied as a liniment, as singular good for the prick or sting of wasps, hornets and bees; and likewise against the poison of serpents, especially of the viper, etc.—Holland's Plinie, B. xxiii., c. 18: l. 14, '*Aconiton*' = a poison, hemlock. Here, *et frequenter*, Greene, led by the alliteration, has used a particular poison generally for all poisons.

Page 8, l. 4, '*th' arsh*'—this example of elision of the 'h' is to be noted; but it is taken away because of the 'h' in 'th,' and that there might be no hindrance to the monosyllabic pronunciation: l. 9, '*shadowed*' = painted (or covered with a thin covering). This is the second time Greene speaks of Phidias as a painter. Apparently used generically for 'masons,' as *aconiton* for poison, above: l. 11, '*polt foot*'—see Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*, as before.

10, l. 7, '*Ralph Sidley*': p. 11, last l., '*Richard Hake*'—see Index of Names, *s.n.*, as before.

„ 11, l. 17, '*attaint*'—from the Latin *attingere*, to stain. We have the two verbs in English to 'taint' and 'attaint'—the former more usually = stain, while the latter is used in the derivative sense (as here) to accuse or convict. Cf. p. 14, last l., 'taint.'

„ 13, l. 10, '*flat*' = downright: l. 15, '*quaint*'—proof that it was also used in our present

sense, and not merely as 'spruce, neat,' as says Minsheu; but Greene uses it in the latter sense as well, p. 82, l. 14, etc.: l. 18, 'too too'—an emphasis found frequently contemporarily and in Shakespeare.

- Page 14, l. 12, '*buxome*'—this word calls for notice because Greene seems in the very next line to contradict it, saying that "pearles of sorrow dropt from them." Cotgrave gives its French equivalent as '*gailliard*,' and Minsheu says—'or merry:' l. 26, '*Lesse*' = 'less or unless.
- „ 15, l. 4, '*sighes*'—here (as in Spenser) requires to be pronounced as a dissyllable, albeit the measure is irregular elsewhere: l. 8, '*Weedes*' = mourning garments as at present, as shown by l. 15. As = garment, the following occurs in Bellenden's Scotch translation of Boethius' History of Scotland. Speaking of the weird sisters who met Macbeth and Banquo, he says, they were "in elrage and uncouth *weid*" (elrage = elriche) or Burns's *eildrich*.
- „ 16, l. 2, '*Sublimatum*' = corrosive sublimate, hydr. perchloridum: l. 5, '*counteruaile*' = to act with equal force against, to counterpoise—an odd phrase, but readily understood on remembering the supposed efficacy of these journeys: l. 13, '*cankars*' = worms that prey upon blossoms. So Shakespeare—"loathsome *cankar* lives in sweetest bud," *et freq.*: l. 15, '*Artophilex*' = Arctophylax,

Arcturus; *i.e.* Bootes, a star of the Bear's tail, near the North Pole: l. 19, '*quiddities*' = subtleties, as p. 41, l. 14: l. 23, '*all should split again*'—nautical—from the violence of the wind-storm.

- Page 17, l. 10, '*limons*' = lemons: l. 11, '*apricocks*' = apricots. Even so late as Cowley it was so spelt: l. 20, '*song*' = sung: l. 25, '*with many a stripe*'—Did Greene misunderstand the 'oaten pipe'? Scarcely. Probably 'pipe,' enforced by the rhyme of 'stripe,' = the stopping and unstopping of the holes with the fingers, or swift running touches.
- „ 18, l. 11, '*start*' = started—as before in verbs ending in 't.' So p. 19, l. 5; but see p. 17, l. 19: l. 17, '*woe*' = woo: l. 27, '*youth*' seems used as a dissyllable, as in p. 19, l. 4. So 'desire,' in p. 19, l. 1, seems a trisyllable, and 'Loues' l. 2 and 'sawe' l. 5 dissyllables. See on Greene's versification annotated *Life* in Vol. I.
- „ 19, l. 5, '*sawe*' = saying: l. 6, '*Bet*'—old past tense of 'beat': l. 9—comma not needed after 'fled.'
- „ 21, l. 10, '*voucht*' = vouchsafed or agreed to: l. 16, '*Rine*' = Rhine: l. 28, '*cut*'—an example of what is now a vulgarism or cant phrase = I went over, etc.
- „ 22, l. 5, '*with*'—misprinted 'which' in the original: l. 9, '*Regiment*' = rule: l. 23, '*Salamander stones*'—see separate lists,

as before : l. 24, '*queasie*' = sickish, or as here, delicate.

- Page 23, l. 15, '*claw*'—here used as in the proverbial saying 'Claw me and I'll claw thee' = to scratch as when one itches : l. 19, '*Lions*' = Lyons.
- „ 24, l. 18, '*orient . . . Pearles*'—here and further on, Greene uses '*orient pearles*' apparently in the sense of fairer or fairest pearls.
- „ 25, l. 3, '*Paramours*' = loving ones in good sense. Cf. p. 45, l. 14, and p. 70, l. 12 : l. 6, '*drugges*'—*qy.* = ointments ? l. 20, '*daring glasses*'—a mode of fowling was to daze or dazzle birds with mirrors : also to 'dare' or terrify them with hawks, bells, etc. See Henry VIII., III. ii. 282. So in '*Measure for Measure*,' IV. ii., this sense best explains the passage : l. 23, '*they sue*'—'they' refers to 'fooles,' not to the possessors of their nets.
- „ 26, l. 26, '*Adamant*'—another example where it cannot possibly mean 'loadstone' but a diamond.
- „ 27, l. 1, '*as rare as black swans*'—the 'black swan' of Australia was then and long after unknown : l. 4, '*inferre*' = bring in : l. 14, '*conclusive*' = concluding : *ibid.*, '*period*' = sentence : l. 16, '*fondnesse*' = foolishness.
- „ 28, l. 17, '*artificially*'—see on p. 6, l. 13.
- „ 29, l. 16, '*censure*' = judge : l. 19,—these further examples of '*blancke verse*' to be



noted, as well as the rhyming (as in Shakespeare) of the closing two lines.

Page 32, l. 8, '*a fauour seldome*,' etc.—shows Greene knew Italian customs.

- „ 33, l. 3, '*euented*' = fallen out or happened.
- „ 35, l. 4, '*while*' = until—excellent example : l. 14, '*fond*' = foolish : l. 24, '*bauyn*' = brushwood, or a bundle or faggot of brushwood, as before : l. 25, '*but*' = only.
- „ 36, l. 8, '*endue*,' as still; but the verbs 'endow' and 'en' or 'indue' seem to have been confounded frequently.
- „ 38, l. 10, '*French crown*' = a gold coin value 6s. 8d. : l. 12, '*euerie rag*,' etc. = she curtsyed so reverently that every rag on her curtsied. Cf. p. 43, l. 8 : l. 27, '*pasport*'—beggars were then as it were licensed. Cf. p. 39, l. 18.
- „ 39, l. 21, '*tenure*' = tenor : l. 21, '*angels*' = gold coin so called, value 11s. : l. 26, '*the whiles*' = meanwhile.
- „ 40, l. 10, '*unles*' = lest : l. 21, '*Andueile*' = anvil. Florio, Cotgrave, Minsheu, all spell it 'anduil' or 'anduile': l. 22, '*Sethin wood*' = shittim wood. See Exodus c. xxv., and Batman c. 150, l. 17.
- „ 41, l. 6, '*perfect*'—read [im]perfect. The context suggests this, while 'perfect' makes nonsense : l. 14, '*quiddities*' = subtleties, as before, *et freq.* : l. 26, '*pedentim*' = by little and little.
- „ 42, l. 4, '*begunne*' = began.

- Page 44, l. 16, '*the owne*'—read 'thy owne' or 'thine owne': l. 20, '*censurest*' = judgest, *ut freq.*
- „ 45, l. 6, '*moles*' = spot or stain, as before. Cf. p. 47, l. 3, and see Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*: l. 17, '*curious*' = careful or painstaking: but see Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*
- „ 46, l. 9, '*standish*' = stand that held pens, ink, sand, etc., *ut freq.*: l. 21, '*deeme*' = judge.
- „ 47, l. 5, '*Virago*'—Did Greene here use the word in a good sense? It is hard to see how Dido could properly be called 'Virago' as we use the word: l. 7, '*Queene of Poetry . . . Ferriman*' = Sappho and Phaon: l. 19, '*Dictannum*' = Dictamnum or dictanus, *i.e.* dittanie: l. 20, '*bruse*' = browse.
- „ 48, l. 3, '*ambages*' = ambiguities of words, evasions, circumlocutions: l. 21, '*closely*' = silyly, hiddenly.
- „ 49, l. 14, '*disaster fortune*' = disastrous fortune, as before. So p. 58, l. 24: l. 25, delete comma after 'are.'
- „ 50, l. 2, '*fro*'—either = frō, *i.e.* from, or simply 'fro': l. 4, '*continents*' = the things or persons containing: l. 10, '*dumpe*' = sorrow: l. 24, '*broke*' = brook.
- „ 51, ll. 2 and 3 are unrhythmical—read 'in-trapped' and '[with]in.' Had they been rhyming lines one might have admitted two-foot lines, but each is the line of a different couplet, and their corresponding lines are each three feet and a syllable: l. 11, '*bay*' = branch of bay or laurel.

- Page 52, l. 8, 'sawst' = sauced : l. 16, 'that trowd' = 'Oh my heart! that [thing] my eye knew.'
- „ 53, l. 4, 'driftes' = forceful courses? Cf. p. 58, l. 1 : l. 8, 'Oratresse' = pleader (oratrix). Orator is still used in legal forms = one who prays : l. 12, 'without hose'—if the 'hose' be stockings, it is a curious part of her garments to pitch upon when all were wanting — recalls Miss Isabella Bird's adventure in suddenly coming upon a venerable Japanese busy over a newspaper and wearing only—a pair of spectacles. The passage seems to show that such ladies slept in their smock and petticoat. See also 'night geere,' l. 14 : l. 20, 'incountred.' Cf. p. 54, l. 9.
- „ 54, l. 5, 'Paramour.' See also p. 60, l. 26—fresh examples of the former good meaning of the word in opposition to its deteriorated one ; albeit Greene, as well as his contemporaries, uses the word in its ill sense. See Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*: l. 7, 'swound' = swoon : l. 22, 'bootlesse' = useless : l. 27, 'rechlesnesse' = recklessness.
- „ 55, l. 4, 'familiar' = friend or of thy family, thy co-mate : l. 21, 'Chriseroll'—an error—as its use twice in this tale shows—for 'Chrisocoll.' See Pliny, l. 33, c. 5. The following is from Holyoke's Rider, "Chryso-colla . . . χρυσος, aurum, and κολλα, gluten . . . A kind of minerall found like sand in veines of brasse, silver, or gold ;

- one kind of it is called boras [not borax], or greene earth, with which the goldsmiths solder gold: a kinde of painters greene, a kind of stone": l. 25, 'Topace': l. 26, 'Emerald'—see separate lists, as before.
- Page 56, l. 17, 'false gallop'—Does Greene play on the phrase and mean that she in her 'gallop' was 'false' to her father, and her lover an accomplice in it?
- „ 57, l. 6, 'euerie string,' etc.—an example proving that 'stretching a string'—a phrase before noted—was a musical metaphor.
- „ 58, l. 1, 'drift.' We should say 'What was the drift?' etc. Cf. p. 53, l. 4: l. 21, 'inferre' = bring in, *ut freq.*: l. 24, 'disaster' = disastrous, *ut freq.*: last l., 'again' = against.
- „ 59, l. 11, 'are'—either error for 'art,' or a slip from the double apparent nominatives, "woman and [a person] endued with reason": l. 15, 'Caruia'—see Index of Names, as before: l. 18, 'infringe' = break in upon: l. 25, 'I' = ay.
- „ 61, l. 2, 'Comicall' = merry: l. 9, 'stooue'—*qy.* error for 'stoode'? l. 15, 'Conuenticle' = assembly.
- „ 62, l. 10, 'cur'—error for 'car.'
- „ 64, l. 11, 'censure' = judge: l. 18, 'Eyceronicall'—error for 'Eyconomicall,' or perhaps for an adjective from *οικουρημα* = care at home.
- „ 65, l. 19, 'addicted' = (Latinate) delivered or appointed (or granted).

- Page 66, l. 14—in the original 'remoue. She'—corrected : l. 19, 'Troynouant' = London, *ut freq.*
- „ 67, ll. 14, 18, 'artificiall' = artful—with an equivoque: l. 22, 'adamants'—here = load-stones, not diamonds: l. 23, 'Ermly' = ermine.
- „ 68, l. 7, 'vailde'—a nautical phrase = lowered, *i.e.* doffed: l. 12, 'he had scarce seen the lions'—a London saying = he had had barely time to see the lions in the Tower, one of the first London sights he would be taken to: l. 26, 'vale' = veil: l. 27, 'no racke' = cloud—an example which confirms this interpretation being given to *The Tempest*, IV. i.
- „ 69, l. 2, 'secret searching' = secret-searching: l. 10, 'fio'—see in p. 50, l. 2.
- „ 70, l. 1, 'appeare[d]'—or appeare: l. 5, 'straines'—the old compositor, probably misled by 'pompous,' seems to have misprinted his substantive; for Greene can surely not have used 'straines' for 'long strained studies'? l. 6, 'brasse paved' = brass-paved: l. 10, 'tainted' = stained: l. 11, 'Artophilex.' See on p. 16, l. 15: l. 12, 'orient'—another instance where the word was used by Greene to mean 'fair or white': l. 19, 'sights' = eyes: l. 23, 'lemman' = evil woman: l. 24, 'vaile'—see on p. 68, l. 7.
- „ 71, l. 19, 'censure' = judge, *ut freq.*

- Page 72, l. 1, '*wanton eie*'—This phrase might possibly be justified; but did not Greene intend to write 'a fained modestie hiding a wanton eie'? l. 21, '*affoord you*'—punctuate '*affoord*,'.
- „ 73, l. 26, '*while*' = until, *ut freq.*: l. 28, '*traine*' = lure, *i.e.* the train of seed, etc., laid up to the trap.
- „ 74, l. 28, '*set all her wits vpon Ela*' = upon their highest, this note being the highest on the gamut. The metaphor was common.
- „ 76, l. 5, '*siluer, white*'—*qy.* silver-white?
- „ 77, l. 17, '*solempne*'—the 'p' to be again noted: *ibid.*, '*conge*' = bow, adieu: l. 18, '*whereas*' = whereat.
- „ 79, l. 25, '*canonized*'—looking to '*periurie*' we may take it that Greene used the word in the sense of 'made a canon or law of,' *i.e.* made an example of. Perhaps, however, he used it loosely as = enshrined.
- „ 80, l. 17—in the original 'not' is also inserted by error before 'regard': l. 19, '*Desire not*,' etc. From Proverbs vi. 25—33, but I know not from what translation. This is a good example of italics being used to mark a quotation, *e.g.*, all the supposed quotations of madrigals, etc., are in italics.
- „ 81, l. 13, '*wife*,' etc.—almost the words of Proverbs v. 18.
- „ 82, l. 12, '*paramour*' = mistress in the evil present-day sense. Cf. p. 99, l. 27: l. 13, '*affects*' = affections, desires. So p. 92,

l. 5 : l. 14, '*quaint*' = spruce, neat (Minshew, *s.v.*). For present-day meaning see on p. 13, l. 15 : l. 27, '*dumping*' = moping.

- Page 84, l. 12, '*changelings*,' *i.e.* as stone : l. 20, '*Metaphusicall*' = metaphysical, as before, *i.e.* beyond what is natural : l. 23, '*apoplexy*' = such a disorder or quelling of the senses as occurs in apoplexy.
- „ 85, l. 1, '*spit on thy hand*'—for the purpose of taking a firmer hold—a common practice with artizans, etc. : l. 3, '*reueale*,' *i.e.* to reveal a secret to.
- „ 87, l. 4, '*charie*' = careful.
- „ 88, l. 13, '*curiosity*' = carefulness : l. 23, '*passee*' = account of.
- „ 89, l. 23, '*period*' = conclusion : l. 26, '*quatted*' = set down—a word used for the squatting or lying down of a chased animal in order to escape detection.
- „ 90, l. 19, '*basht*' = abashed : l. 22, '*tramels*' = nets. So p. 93, l. 9.
- „ 91, l. 6, '*flat*' = mere : l. 15, '*adamant*' = loadstone, once more : l. 19, '*submissee*' = submissive.
- „ 92, l. 20, '*Galaxia*' = transition-form of 'galaxy,' *i.e.* as a still foreign word = milky way : l. 21, '*la voltas*' = lively kind of waltz, celebrated in Sir John Davies's 'Orchestra' : l. 27, '*front*' = brow or forehead. It is noteworthy that the lamented young poetess of India, Toru Dutt,

seems to have elected it as the most expressive word for the thing, *e.g.*

“ Warmly they greet the modest bride  
With her dark eyes and *front* sublime.”

Savitri, Pt. ii. p. 14 (Ancient Ballads and Legends of Hindustan : London, Kegan Paul, Trench, and Co., 1882).

- Page 93, l. 2, ‘*tainted*’ = tinted : *ibid.*, ‘*staines*’—misprinted in the original ‘*straines*’ : l. 7, ‘*checkers*’—the *golden wyers* bring the bright rays, they ‘*chequer*’ or diversify the morning sky. Cf. Romeo and Juliet II. v.
- „ 94, l. 20, ‘*lower*’ = lour : l. 25, ‘*familiars*’ = intimates.
- „ 96, l. 18, ‘*head*’—misprinted ‘*hand*’ : *ibid.*, ‘*hammering*’ = thinking over doubtfully and anxiously ; but whence came this frequent metaphor? See Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*
- „ 97, l. 2, ‘*braue*’ = challenge or vaunt : l. 3, ‘*condempne*’—the ‘*p*’ to be also noted here : l. 6, ‘*swindge*’ = swing.
- „ 98, l. 1, ‘*resolution*’ = firmness, *i.e.* firm belief, or I am too resolved of thy constancie, etc. : l. 17, ‘*content*’ = contented by possessing—a mild pun = content with [the absence of] her Francesco.
- „ 99, l. 17, ‘*quittance*’ = requite. Cf. p. 16, l. 6 : l. 26, punctuate ‘*yet*’.
- „ 100, l. 10—misprinted in the original ‘*qualities*’ : l. 22, ‘*while*’ = until, *ut freq.* : *ibid.*, ‘*Marioran*’ = marjoram.



- Page 101, l. 10, '*experience*' = try : l. 22, '*chyne*' = chin—we still say 'to drop the chin.'
- „ 102, l. 20, '*morgaged*' = mortgaged : l. 23, '*cooling Card*'—see Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*, for prior examples.
- „ 103, l. 3, '*uncouth*' = strange. So p. 105, l. 6: l. 10, '*conster*' = construe: l. 26, '*Pathemas*' = (Greek) *παθημα*, suffering or calamity. As a foreign word it is printed in italics: *ibid.*, '*stung*'—misprinted 'sting' in the original.
- „ 104, l. 8, '*preiudicial*'—a singularly chill and inept word here in present-day meaning, but then = harmful. Greene uses it as = hurt, p. 20, l. 5; p. 26, l. 25; p. 36, l. 16: l. 20, '*commodite*'—he probably so called it because, as he well knew, they were obliged to take commodities—even brown paper—in lieu of money: but *qy.* = accommodation bill?
- „ 105, l. 12, '*Periode*' = sentence. Cf. p. 27, l. 14: l. 26, '*frump*' = flout or mock. So p. 133, l. 13, and p. 180, l. 6, etc., etc.
- „ 107, l. 22, '*as infectious as the Diamond*'—an old Vulgar Error: l. 23, '*Aconiton*'—a clear proof that Greene used the word as = poison generally, as before noted, and so p. 125, last l.: l. 24, '*Deianiea*'—read *Deinaei[r]a*.
- „ 108, l. 4, '*eagles*'—Greene is wrong in his ornithology—he should have said 'vultures'; but the original error is from

the Vulgate : l. 16, '*preuent*' = anticipate.  
So p. 125, last l.

## FRANCESCO'S FORTUNES.

- Page 115, l. 1, '*Thomas Burnaby*'—see Index of Names, as before : l. 5, '*ingratful*' = ungrateful. So l. 11.
- „ 116, l. 18, read—'And though [you hold the writer as]?'
- „ 119, l. 20, '*Richard Hake*'—see Index of Names, as before.
- „ 120, l. 11, '*deemed*' = judged : l. 14, '*ligge*'—*qy.* misprint for '*jigge*'?
- „ 121, l. 6, '*lighten*' = make light or kindle—usual 'en' form.
- „ 122, l. 11, '*prime*' = spring-time.
- „ 123, l. 4, '*shoes*' = shows : l. 10—rhythm and the measure of the rhyming line require 'wrapped' as a dissyllable : l. 12, '*stales*' = decoys, and so p. 134, l. 9, *et freq.* : l. 17, '*blin*' = to cease.
- „ 124, l. 2, '*dump*' = sorrow.
- „ 125, l. 24, '*after wits*' = wits behindhand.
- „ 126, l. 26, '*deciphering*'—see Glossarial-Index for prior examples.
- „ 127, l. 7, '*Porpus*' = porpoise : l. 18, '*apple*' = gift. Possibly the phrase was an ill remembrance of the story of Paris and the apple.
- „ 128, l. 9, '*as high as Ela*' = to the highest

note of the gamut, as before: l. 16, 'sight' = sighed: ll. 23-28 — an autobiographical passage to be noted.

Page 129, l. 7, 'exquisite' = perfect: l. 20, 'canuased' — see Glossary, *s.v.*, on this peculiar word, with additional examples: l. 22, 'troden vnder foote' = kept secret: *ibid.*, 'flatlie' = plainly.

- „ 130, l. 6, 'Thrases' — error for Thrasos (pl.): l. 12, 'Gnatos' = Gnathos, the classical commonplace name for parasites: *ibid.*, 'trencher friends' = eaters and drinkers at others' expense, or as long as hospitality is shown, on 'mahogany,' not 'deal.' There are here autobiographic touches again: l. 14, 'corum' — error for 'eorum' — 'sullo' can't be misprint for 'exemplo': l. 25, 'for' — *qy.* error for 'from' or 'frō'?
- „ 132, l. 8, 'quipt' = spoke sarcastically: l. 13, 'termes' = phrases: l. 19, 'censure' = judgment: l. 27, 'check' = stop or reproof.
- „ 133, l. 14, 'bragge' = boastful: l. 17, 'quip' = wittie taunt.—Baret.
- „ 134, l. 3, 'braue' = bravely accoutred: l. 7, 'haggard' = a wild or untamed hawk: l. 27, 'amated' = dreaded, daunted, dismayed (Fr. *mat*).
- „ 135, l. 1, 'Amatist' = lover: but it is to be noted that 'amethyst' was often so spelt, as in Batman: l. 12, 'Saturnist' = saturnine man: l. 17, 'Adamant' = magnet (probably).

- Page 136, l. 11, '*feature*' = person, *ut freq.* See Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*, for a full Note.
- „ 139, l. 22, '*Tush*,' etc.—a quotation the italics would seem to show.
- „ 140, l. 6, '*Horseleach*'—Proverbs xxx. 15.
- „ 141, l. 11, '*fact*' = act. So p. 152, l. 2: p. 162, l. 1. It was often used for a grievous act, fault, or sin, as in these two references.
- „ 142, l. 18, '*gippe*'—*qy.* contraction for 'gee up' = get along—a term of encouragement or admonition to a horse.
- „ 143, l. 14, '*empty gordgde*' = empty throated: l. 23, '*luers*' = lures: l. 28, '*clarkly*' = scholarly.
- „ 144, l. 18, '*censured*' = judged: l. 19, '*curious*' = careful, inasmuch as carefully bestowed: l. 27, '*quatted*'—This word, repeatedly used by Greene, appears to have been taken from the Italian *quattare*, to squat, and may originally have been a hunting term, though this is more doubtful. Hence by a figure = put out.
- „ 146, l. 19, '*tried*' = proved: l. 24, '*shadowe*' = covering.
- „ 147, l. 24, '*appale*' = appal.
- „ 148, l. 3, '*way*' = [make] way: l. 20, '*Paramour*'—the next sentences show that the word is here used in its ill sense, and not simply as that of 'lover.' So p. 166, l. 14: l. 27, '*race*' = raze.
- „ 149, l. 9, '*vale*' = veil: l. 19, '*stripes*'—Luke

- xii. 47 : l. 21, '*cooling carde*'—see Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*, for prior examples.
- Page 152, l. 2, '*fact*'—see on p. 141, l. 11.
- „ 153, l. 5, '*sift*' = search after : l. 10, '*infringed*' = broken in upon : l. 21, '*pretended*' = intended. So p. 155, l. 11.
- „ 156, l. 4, '*Stipendium*,' etc.—The Vulgate of Romans vi. 23 is "Stipendia enim peccati, mors." Italics, as before, show a quotation, though this, except they be in Latin, etc., is not always observed by Greene : l. 18, '*sacklesse*' = innocent, as before ; *i.e.* not worthy of the sack. So p. 158, l. 5.
- „ 157, l. 24, '*sild*' = seldom.
- „ 158, l. 2, '*mynt*' = coin : l. 11, '*trie*' = prove, *ut freq.* : l. 12, '*maulger*' = maugre.
- „ 159, l. 2, '*dump*'—see Glossary, *s.v.*, for prior examples : l. 18, '*prease*' = press : l. 19, '*canvassed*'—see Glossary, *s.v.*, as before.
- „ 160, l. 16, '*amorettes*'—here = love tricks, blandishments (from Fr.).
- „ 161, l. 6, '*conuerst*' = had to do with. Cf. 2 Peter ii. 7, where our Auth. Vers. 'conversation' may be compared with v. 8, and the Rev. Vers. '*lascivious life*' : l. 23, '*doting lecher*' = foolish through age : last l., '*wheras*' = whereas.
- „ 162, l. 7, '*preuent*' = anticipate and neutralize : l. 17, '*Dotham*' = Dothan. The Vulgate in Genesis xxxvii. 17 has Dothain twice, though Dothan in 2 Kings vi. 13.

- Page 163, l. 16, 'start'—'t' = 'ed,' as before in verbs ending in 't,' though Greene does not always keep the rule.
- „ 164, l. 19, 'passing' = surpassing.
- „ 165, l. 20, 'braue' = brave [it] : l. 22, 'fond' = foolish : l. 23, 'Trencher flies.' See on p. 130, l. 12 = table followers : l. 26, 'squaring'—Its now Devonian use of strutting or swaggering about, best agrees with its use here.
- „ 166, l. 1, 'Deare' = deer—see separate lists, as before : l. 13, 'fondnesse' = foolishness.
- „ 168, l. 8, 'trie' = prove, *ut freq.*
- „ 169, l. 24, 'betide' = betidings, happenings.
- „ 172, l. 12, 'dumpe' = melancholy mood, *ut freq.*
- „ 173, l. 18, 'iumpe' = agree, *ut freq.* : l. 20, 'Chrisocoll'—see on p. 55, l. 21. So p. 183, l. 23.
- „ 174, l. 4, 'Misselden' = mistletoe.
- „ 175, l. 20, 'import' = position.
- „ 176, l. 12, 'the' are' = th' are : l. 20, 'for' = on account of, lest she should heed.
- „ 178, l. 8, 'tramels' = nettings—metaphorical for the curlings of her hair : l. 24, 'fling' = go off quickly. Cf. 'flie thence.'
- „ 179, l. 23, 'intermedling' = intermixing : l. 26, 'Aconiton'—see Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*, *freq.*
- „ 180, l. 16, 'swads'—a *swad* in the North is a pescod-shell : thence used for an empty shallow-headed fellow"—Blount : l. 18,

'*Menalcus*' = Menalcas : l. 25, '*Hobby*'—a very small and inferior hawk, given by hawking rules to the "young man" : l. 26, '*Bunting*' = bird, or different species of birds so called : *ibid.*, '*too*,' and l. 27, '*to*'—excellent examples of the arbitrary spelling of 'too' and 'to.'

- Page 181, l. 2, '*ouer-lookt*' = looked too high : *ibid.*, '*ouerlaid*' = laid over ; *i.e.* oppressed or crushed : l. 5, '*truncheon*'—formerly used as a synonym for a spear (and not the 'haft' only) : l. 15, '*personage*' = the appearance of the person.
- „ 182, l. 17, '*Adamants*'—first instance in Greene where 'adamant' is unequivocally a magnet : l. 26, '*frumps*' = mocks or sarcastic taunts, sometimes lies, *ut freq.*
- „ 183, l. 13, '*Agyte*' = agate : l. 14, '*Chrisocoll*' = see on p. 55, l. 21.
- „ 184, l. 5, '*meane*' = medium : l. 10, '*authenticall*' = authorized or established by (your saying) : l. 24, '*wrapt . . . Mullidor*' = wrapt one called Mullidor in the labyrinth of love, etc.
- „ 185, l. 13, '*scholler*'—to be understood as though it were schollar [in] : l. 14, '*ruffling*' = swaggering : l. 17, '*randon*' = random, as before.
- „ 186, l. 2, '*espyed*'—misprinted in original 'espying' : or *qy.* read 'espying, marueiled' ? : l. 10, '*than an Asse*'—such words as Venus, Phillis, Jesus, etc., had no

mark of genitive, the 's' being apparently elided. So here.

- Page 187, l. 3, 'turning Crabbes in the fire' = roasting crab-apples to put in ale. Cf. Mid. N. Dr. II. i.: l. 7, 'lenten' = Lenten: l. 9, 'alate' = lately: l. 22, 'potted'—probable error for 'pottle,' *i.e.* pottle of ale: l. 28, 'the diuell in a mortar' = the devil in a Lord Chancellor's, etc., cap; or it may be in a chamber-light (Fr. *Mortier*).
- „ 188, l. 5, 'Lockeram'—a cheap linen of more or less coarseness: last l., 'springall' = youth.
- „ 189, l. 10, 'testificate'—used like 'reparrell' (l. 28) as showing their rusticity = testimonial: l. 23, 'smugge' = spruce, neat (Cotgrave gives it as one of the synonyms of Fr. *Net*): last l., 'reparrell' = apparel—see on l. 10.
- „ 190, l. 24, 'ambrie' = cupboard or pantry: l. 25, 'candle' = a corner, *i.e.* a piece: l. 27, 'standvppes' = shoes, or possibly boots: l. 28, 'Lockeram band' = fall. See on p. 188, l. 5.
- „ 191, l. 15, 'eaw' = ewe.
- „ 193, l. 17, 'Marie' = marry: l. 26, 'raind' = rein'd.
- „ 194, l. 7, 'blemisht' = stained: l. 19, 'fronts' = faces. See on p. 92, l. 27: l. 25, 'gree' = favour, desire (the verb 'agree')
- „ 195, l. 3, 'affects' = affections: l. 7, 'rootes of Hemlock'—see separate lists, as before: l. 12, 'Phere' = associate: l. 22, 'afore'



- = before: l. 23, '*meacock*' = effeminate, silly fellow.
- Page 196, l. 3, '*sconce*' = fort or bastion—a rather far-fetched application explained by the next clause: l. 17, '*tall*' = manful or manly. So p. 199, l. 12.
- „ 197, l. 1, '*hinct*'—cannot find this word anywhere. Cotgrave has, under Pinse morille [Pinch, the (small red) Mushroom]. 'The game called 'hinch, pinch, and laugh not': l. 5, '*old coyle*'—then a common expression for a great coyle or tumult: l. 28, '*iumpé*' = agree to, *ut freq.*
- „ 198, l. 2, '*top-gallant*'—then the highest mast or sail in a vessel; now we have the 'royal' above it: l. 8, '*start vp*' = 'ed,' as before: l. 13, '*circumglaze*'—probably Mullidor's attempt at a fine word, like 'testificate' and 'reparel.' To 'gleg' (according to Mr. J. O. Halliwell-Phillipps, is Northern for to glance aslant or slyly, and Glag Lanch is to see. If not the first of these, he may mean polish her around, *i.e.* smooth her down; or else circumdaze = addle her senses. Cf. 'so wrapt her,' etc.: l. 24, '*venies*' = bouts in fencing.
- „ 199, l. 2, '*dudgin dagger*'—the common kind of daggers were hafted with dudgeon or box wood. A wooden handle would be liable to become loose: l. 12, '*tried*' = proved, *ut freq.*: l. 23, '*vncoth*' = strange, *ut freq.*: l. 27, '*extemperat*' = extemporaneous.

- Page 200, l. 3, '*vale*' = veil: l. 18, '*nild*' = nould, *i.e.* would not.
- „ 202, l. 21, '*confection*'—seems to be used, as elsewhere = a mixture of drugs or poisons as of a mixture containing these.
- „ 203, l. 3, '*peeuish*' = overthwart, perverse, arrogant: l. 5, '*able kil*'; and p. 206, l. 3, '*strings crack*'—these are excellent examples of the elision of 'to' before the infinitive. This is not so frequent in Greene as in others: l. 8, '*Aconiton*,' and l. 25, '*standish*'—see Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*, for many examples.
- „ 205, l. 6, '*Adamants*' = loadstones—see on p. 182, l. 17.
- „ 207, l. 13, '*Erecine*'—must have been in Thessaly: l. 15, '*tracing*' = tracking, following.
- „ 211, l. 9, '*bauins*'—as before. See Glossarial-Index, *s.v.*: l. 9, '*blaze*' = a sudden and quick-lasting 'blaze.' Hence the phrase is a double intensive: l. 22, '*confused*' = in doubt or bewildered.
- „ 212, l. 5, '*whales bone*'—not our whalebone, but the bones of a whale cleaned and polished and exposed to the sun as we see them in England.
- „ 214, l. 20, '*braids*'—an example of the substantive use of a word the adjective form of which has caused much discussion lately, ended by the discovery of other examples.

“Since Frenchman are so braid”

means, since they are so deceitful. Here it is = deceit.

- Page 215, l. 21, ‘*bottle of hay*’ = bundle of hay—probably of fixed size. Qy. sufficient for a meal?
- „ 216, l. 9, ‘*searecloth*’ = cere-cloth, *i.e.* a waxed cloth or plaster : l. 12, ‘*no ho*’ = no whoa, no stop—the carter’s term to his horse.
- „ 217, l. 11, ‘*stoand*’ = entire.
- „ 218, l. 4, ‘*trauells*’ = travails : l. 22, ‘*weld*’ = wield, as in Spenser.
- „ 219, l. 2, ‘*woodcock*’ = silly fellow : l. 4, ‘*fond*’ = foolish, *ut freq.* : l. 6—delete one ‘*than*’ : l. 13, ‘*stale*’ = decoy—formed and painted in shape of the real animal. So p. 222, l. 4, *ut freq.* : l. 26, ‘*weare*’—misprinted in the original (or variant) ‘*were*.’ Cf. p. 220, l. 7.
- „ 220, l. 1, ‘*affects*’ = affections, *ut freq.*
- „ 222, l. 4, ‘*bate*’ = “a hawking term, to flutter unquietly” (Fr. *battre*); “when the hawk fluttereth with her wings, either from perch or fist, as it were striving to get away; also it is taken for her striving with her prey, and not forsaking it till it be overcome”—R. Holmes, ‘Academy of Armoury and Blazon,’ p. 238 (as quoted in Dyce’s Glossary) : l. 5, ‘*straight*’ = strait : l. 25, ‘*Catastrophe*’—here simply = ending or finale, as one spoke technically of the catastrophe of a Play being happy : l. 26,

'*Kistrell*'—misprinted in the original  
'*Kitrell*.'

- Page 223, l. 3, '*Achilles sword*'—a slip—elsewhere  
Greene correctly attributes the power to his  
lance: l. 8, '*preserves*' = preservatives.  
Greene probably chose this because the two  
preceding words are dissyllabic. '*Mithri-*  
*dates*' were generally complex and made  
up in a paste or '*preserve*' form: l. 24,  
'*fulfild*' = filled full, *ut freq.*
- „ 224, l. 7—at side here and onward are placed a  
series of poor little woodcuts of the twelve  
Signs of the Zodiac—not at all worthy of  
reproduction. But we furnish the twelve  
Signs in type-ornament form: l. 19, '*plow*  
*swaynes*'—as the chief is the '*labourer*,'  
not the '*farmer*,' one doubts its meaning  
as = plough labourers. Qy.—misprint for  
'*plow shares*'?
- „ 225, l. 2, '*whereas*' = whereat: l. 16, '*vaine*'—  
misprinted in the original '*vaine*': l. 22,  
'*riping*' = ripening: *ibid.*, '*yeolow*'—note  
the spelling, as Spenser in the '*Ruines*  
*of Time*,' l. 10 —“ Rending her *yeolow*  
locks . . .” (my edn. Works, Vol. II. p. 11).
- „ 225, l. 15, '*Lemman*'—here Apollo the man  
lover, not the female: *ibid.*, '*blins*' = stops,  
stays, delays, as elsewhere,
- „ 227, l. 11, '*When as*' = when at, as whereas is  
whereat: l. 18, '*repent*' = repentance: l. 20,  
'*glide*' = gliding (stream): l. 21, '*baine*'  
= bathe (Fr. *bain*): l. 22, '*daies growes*

*short* = time grows short ; *i.e.* collective plural ; and so l. 24, '*flowers . . . hides.*' My good friend Dr. Brinsley Nicholson writes me here—"an attempt to excuse Greene's inaccuracy which is overthrown by dozens of examples in him, in Shakespeare, and in contemporaries." I doubt the alleged inaccuracies. Greene, at least was a scholar—"Master of Arts in both Universities," and I, for one, hold it extremely unlikely that any scholar would, or could, perpetrate grammatical 'inaccuracies.' I find, if we think deeply and patiently enough, accuracy underlies all, even the most startling forms. Of course I none the less admit that technically our later forms are more exact ; but this concession leaves untouched the inward accuracy of Greene and other contemporaries. See more on this in annotated Life in Vol. I.

Page 228, l. 5, '*whist*' = hushed : l. 17, '*youth by follie*'—*qy.* a misprint for 'youthly,' seeing that the sense requires 'Repentance' to be the nominative to 'expells' ?

## II. PROVERBS, PROVERBIAL SAYINGS, PHRASES, ETC.

Page 8, l. 13, '*I stretch my strings*'—a musical metaphor.

„ 16, l. 23, '*as if all should split again*'—a nautical metaphor, from the effect of a wind-tempest on a ship's sails.

- Page 23, l. 13, '*plod too far*'—we say 'go too far':  
 l. 15, '*clawe a fooles shoulder*' = flatter.
- „ 26, l. 15, '*out of sight out of mind*': l. 17,  
 '*like Venetian traffique . . . for his penney*'  
 = Venetian harlotry: last l., '*leading apes  
 in hell.*'
- „ 34, l. 5, '*treading his shoe without anie slip*':  
 l. 14, '*set vp her rest with him.*'
- „ 35, l. 3, '*are you so idle tasked that you stand  
 vppon thornes while you have a husband?*':  
 l. 5, '*no sooner hatched, with the Lapwing,*  
 etc. Cf. Hamlet V. ii.
- „ 36, l. 9, '*want breakes amitie*' . . . '*loue begin-  
 neth in golde and endeth in beggerie*' . . .  
 '*such as marrie but to a faire face tie them-  
 selues oft to a foule bargain*': l. 19, '*per-  
 suade a woman from her will.*'
- „ 37, l. 27, '*fetching the compasse of his conceipt  
 beyond the Moone.*'
- „ 38, l. 14, '*He that harped on another string.*'
- „ 39, l. 24, '*venter a ioint, but shee would further  
 him in his loues.*'
- „ 41, l. 21, '*find a knot in a rish.*'
- „ 42, l. 10, '*stirred his stumps*'—still used: l. 26,  
 '*weakest to the wal*' . . . '*when I am worst  
 forst to holde the candle.*'
- „ 44, l. 15, '*It is a neere collop . . . is out of the  
 own flesh,*' i.e. out of the very or inner  
 flesh.
- „ 47, last l., '*Loue is no lacke.*'
- „ 52, l. 27, '*the old goose could spie the gosling  
 winke.*'

- Page 54, l. 28, '*strained a note too high in loue*'—another musical metaphor.
- „ 57, l. 2, '*present him a boane to know on.*'
- „ 59, l. 4, '*such as looke not before they leape, oft fall into the ditch*': l. 8, '*Fawnes choose their foode by the olde Bucke.*'
- „ 64, last l., '*wishers and woulders were neuer good householders.*'
- „ 68, l. 11, '*the old prouerb, he had scarce seen the lions*'—see Notes and Illustrations on the place.
- „ 71, l. 9, '*fairest blossomes are soonest nipt with frost,*' etc.
- „ 73, l. 22, '*perceiued by the Weather-cocke where the winde blewe.*'
- „ 74, l. 18, '*his hart on his halfpenny*'—This example affords a capital illustration of the meaning of this frequent proverb in Greene, and also suggests its origin, viz., a reference to the joy and care of a child when he holds his unaccustomed halfpenny. Every one has noticed this: l. 27, '*set all her wits vpon Ela*'—see Notes and Illustrations.
- „ 81, l. 9, '*wilt thou striue against the streame? and with the deere feede against the winde?*' l. 18, '*hee that is afraid of euerie bush, shal neuer proue good huntsman,*' and '*he that at euerie gust puts to the Lea shall neuer be good Nauigator*': l. 27, '*the blind eates manie a flie, and much runnes by the mill that the Miller neuer knowes of.*'

- Page 82, l. 1, '*the euill that the eye sees not the heart rues not.*'
- „ 83, l. 22, '*women are wily cattle*': l. 24, '*what our wantonnes offends, your wisdom may amend.*'
- „ 84, l. 24, '*the ouen damp't vp hath the greatest heate*'—'*fire suppress is most forceable*'—'*the streames stopt, either break through or overflow; and sorrowes concealed,*' etc.
- „ 85, l. 1, '*spit on thy hand, and lay holde on thy hart.*' The former done still in Scotland before shaking hands as pledge of closing a bargain: l. 2, '*one pound of care payes not an ounce of debt*': l. 3, '*friend to reueale is a medicine to releue*': l. 20, '*when the obiect is offered to the sense [of touch], the sight is hindred.*'
- „ 86, l. 11, '*Cupid lying at aduantage*': l. 27, '*falts in affections, are but sleight follies.*'
- „ 87, l. 2, '*sins vnseene are halfe pardoned*': l. 24, '*when the Tygre hunteth for his pray, doth he then hide his clawes?*'—'*Is the pyrit stone then most hote, when it looketh most colde?*'—see separate list of names, etc., after Glossary.
- „ 88, l. 20, '*I am a woman, I am easie to be wonne*': l. 22, '*Thou arte (sweet seruant) in a wrong box, and sittest far beside the cushion*'—This looks as though the 'box' of the proverb was not a chest, but a seat in a coach.
- „ 89, l. 1, '*treade her shoo awrie*': l. 4, '*nipped*



*on the head*: l. 6, 'take the showre for the first storme': l. 7, 'so ill a woodman to giue ouer the chace at y first default': l. 21, 'a moneths punishment in hell': l. 22, 'as the Marriners say, a man would haue thought all would haue split againe.'

- Page 90, l. 3, 'such a fresh water souldier that you faint at the first skirmish': l. 9, 'a womans heart and her tongue are not relatives': l. 10, 'tis not euer true that what the heart thinketh the tongue clacketh' [or clinketh, as over and over I've heard it in Scotland]: l. 14, 'a faint heart neuer wonne faire Ladie': l. 19, 'both made vp their market with a faire of kisses.'
- „ 97, l. 8, 'a crooked sien [sion or scion] will proue a straight tree.'
- „ 99, l. 19, 'giue her a weede that presents me a flower': l. 26, 'thy haruest is in the grasse,' i.e. in the unseeded stem or herb.
- „ 101, l. 16, 'the greatest spring-tide the deadeest ebbe': l. 17, 'so long went the pot to the water that at last,' etc.: l. 22, 'well might the Diuell dance there,' etc.—punning on the cross then stamped on various coins, and on the devil's dislike to the cross—a commonly used pun.
- „ 102, l. 5, 'spie by the laste where the shoe wringde him': l. 9, 'set him as a tyrde iade to picke a sallet': l. 16, 'she found that all his corne was on the floore': l. 17, 'his sheepe were clipt, and the Wooll solde.'

- Page 103, l. 20, '*heate suppressed is more violent, the streame stopt makes the greater Deluge.*'
- „ 105, l. 15, '*an ounce of pleasure with a tunne of mishappes*': l. 26, '*thou, and thy name is euer cast in my dish*'—figure from the beggar's dish.
- „ 106, l. 16, '*with a flea in his eare*': l. 24, '*experience is a true mistresse*': l. 25, '*hast thou not leaped into the ditch which thou hast long foreseene.*'
- „ 116, l. 1, '*God and Saint Francis thank you*': l. 2, '*I tooke heart at grasse*': l. 17, '*a knot in a rush.*'
- „ 124, l. 8, '*to bed with the Bee and vp with the Larke*': l. 24, '*I watch with the mouse to argue my selfe miserable.*'
- „ 125, l. 23, '*Had I wist is a great fault.*'
- „ 127, l. 17, '*such as he had were wonne with an Apple, trencher friends.*'
- „ 128, l. 16, '*this old sayd sawe, Miserrimum est fuisse beatum.*'
- „ 137, l. 2, '*forgiue and forget*': l. 6, '*Bones that are broken & after set again are the more stronger; where the Beech Tree is cut, there it growes hard; reconciled friendship is the sweetest amitie.*'
- „ 138, l. 19, '*as the Marble dropps against rayne, so their teares forepoynt mischiefe*': l. 25, '*feare fire with the Childe*': last l., '*Returne not with the dog to the vomit.*'
- „ 139, l. 1, '*wallow not with swine in the myre*': *ibid.*, '*foresee not the best & follow the worst*'

—the common-place classical phrase, in later day pathetically associated with Byron, as everybody knows: l. 10, '*Whoso handleth pitch must needes be defiled*': l. 11, '*the tree that abideth many blasts, at last falleth by the Carpenter's axe; the bird y<sup>e</sup> striketh at euery stale cannot long escape the snare; so long goeth the pitcher to the brooke, that at last it comes broken home*': l. 16, '*who so bindeth two sins together shall neuer be vnreuenged in the one.*'

- Page 142, l. 18 '*marrie gippe Giglet*' = gee up, Giglet.  
 „ 148, l. 1, '*it is harde to striue against the streame*': l. 5, '*loue hoppeth against the hill*': l. 20, '*shee liueth chastly that liueth charily.*'  
 „ 150, l. 23, '*put case I were so carelesse.*'  
 „ 152, l. 24, '*it is vnfit for the young Fawn to lead the old buck; for a blind man to be guide to him that hath his sight.*'  
 „ 153, l. 11, '*wrest her vpon a higher pinne*'—a musical phrase: l. 24, '*I haue the tree in my hand and meane to inioy the fruite; I haue beaten the bush and now will not let the birds flie.*'  
 „ 154, l. 1, '*your sterne lookes shall stand for no sterling*': l. 6, '*she which hath crackt her credite is halfe hanged*': l. 23, '*of two euils chuse the least.*'  
 „ 168, last l., '*enough is a feast.*'  
 „ 169, l. 9, '*playd loth to depart*'—*qy.* name of a tune?

- Page 174, l. 10, 'he loued with the bird to flie to the flame,' etc.
- „ 180, l. 9, 'fancie had not troad on thy heele':  
l. 24, 'I shall bate with the Bunting' = unquiet fluttering.
- „ 181, l. 20, 'strike while the yron was hot.'
- „ 182, l. 4, 'wounded with Achilles Launce, could not be healed but by the same truncheon':  
l. 12, 'lowe fortunes haue high desires.'
- „ 185, l. 3, 'furnish a Cobler's shoppe with clowting leather' = patching leather (qy. for the soles?): l. 10, 'into his great head she put little wit.'
- „ 186, l. 5, 'The Crowe thinkes her foules the fairest,' etc.
- „ 187, l. 8, 'to night thou art not thine owne man':  
l. 26, 'it playes the diuell in a mortar'—see Notes and Illustrations on the place.
- „ 189, l. 12, 'carries away the bell': l. 16, 'when a dogge wagges his taile hee loues his master':  
last l., 'make no bones at it.'
- „ 190, l. 1, 'womens desires,' etc.: l. 8, 'Cats and Dogs come together by scratching': l. 13, 'a thing of course': l. 20, 'ieopard a ioynt.'
- „ 191, l. 10, 'here is wether that makes grasse plentie': l. 20, 'casting a sheepes eye at hir.' What is the origin of this saying? Qy. because the sheep is innocent looking?  
l. 25, 'thinking to bring him into a paradise'—i.e. of Fools.
- „ 192, l. 17, 'hearing the asse ruffle': l. 25, 'looke before you leap.'

- Page 193, l. 2, 'there are more maides than Malkin':  
 l. 8, 'mynse it as twere a mare ouer a mouth  
 full of Thistles.'
- „ 195, l. 23, 'as brag, with your Buzzard on your  
 fist, as a sow vnder an apple tree.'
- „ 196, l. 5, 'till thou beest come out by the eares.'
- „ 197, ll. 5-6, 'it keepes an olde coyle, where it  
 worketh like a iuglers box': l. 11, 'he  
 knoweth not a B from a Battildore': l. 20,  
 'cariest it home to y<sup>e</sup> hiue with a heaue &  
 hoe'—still a nautical phrase.
- „ 198, l. 18, 'wrapt in his mothers smock when hee  
 was borne'—one taken care of and worth  
 the taking care.
- „ 199, l. 1, 'made mee loose in the haft like a dudgin  
 dagger.'
- „ 204, l. 17, 'nipt him on the pate': l. 19, 'he and  
 a pen were as fitte as an asse and a harpe.'
- „ 218, l. 20, 'the least haire hath his shadow':  
 l. 25, 'better golden gyues than iron fetters.'
- „ 219, l. 7, 'Amongst many Scorpions thou lookest  
 for one Eele'—more foolish than looking  
 for a needle in a bundle of hay.
- „ 220, l. 7, 'weare you two the Willowe Garland.'
- „ 226, l. 19, 'I cast my count'—we now say 'I  
 cast [up] my count.'

\* \* \* See annotated Life in Vol. I., for critical notices of emendations  
 herein suggested by Dyce.

A. B. G.

END OF VOL. VIII.









